

Hardissen

History of a Village in Lippe

Lippe Verlag

Contributions to the History of the Town of Lage

11

Hardissen

History of a Village in Lippe

by Nicolas Rügge

with contributions by

Wilhelm Brinkmeyer and Walter Pfaff

Translation by Carol A. Devore on behalf of Marc Brinkmeyer

Lippe Verlag

Bibliographische Information Der Deutschen Bibliothek
Die Deutsche Bibliothek verzeichnet diese Publikation in der
Deutschen Nationalbibliographie; detaillierte Daten sind im
Internet über <http://dnb.ddb.de> abrufbar

2. Edition

Title of the first edition: Nicolas Rügge: Hardissen.

Eine lippische Ortsgeschichte, Lage 1997

Copyright 2006 by LIPPE VERLAG

Hellweg 72, D-32791 Lage

Photos Cover: Hesterbrink, Lage

Print: AZ Druck

ISBN 3-9808082-9-7

Table of Contents

<i>Forewords</i>	7
<i>I. Natural Surroundings and Prehistoric Settlement</i>	21
<i>II. Manorialism in the Middle Ages and in Early Modern Times</i>	25
1. First Mention of Villages and Farmsteads	25
2. Taxes and Services	28
3. The “Bauerschaft”: Sovereign Administrative Cohesion and the Farming Community ...	34
<i>III. Daily Life in Early Modern Times as Reflected in Documents</i>	39
1. Biographical sketches	39
2. Neighbors: Cohesion and Conflict	45
<i>IV. Settlement and Economy</i>	49
1. Farmers, Einlieger, and the Development of the Settlement	49
2. Agriculture and Village-based Industry in Transition	57
<i>V. The Oetternbach and the Bega, and ‘Hardissen Moor’, National Trust Reserve (by Wilhelm Brinkmeyer)</i>	103
<i>VI. Church and School</i>	109
1. The Heiden and Lieme Parishes	109
2. Hardissen School	120
<i>VII. Politics and Gemeinde Administration</i>	141
<i>VIII. Club Life and Future Prospects</i>	163
<i>IX. Farms and Houses</i>	187
<i>Appendix</i>	231



Hardissen in Germany

Foreword to the Second Edition

Every family has fascinating facts and interesting stories that are passed from generation to generation. Usually they are not recorded and are sometimes forgotten. Fortunately for our family, Wilhelm Brinkmeyer captured some of the history of the families of Hardissen.

I like the feeling of knowing where my fore fathers came from. For over 500 years, and possibly more, our family has resided on the family farm. I am pleased to know Wilhelm and have immense respect for the undertaking he made together with Dr. Nicolas Rügge to create a history of the Village of Hardissen and of the families who have lived there. It pleases me to have a small part in this project. Beth Brinkmeyer Osborn, Ernst Brinkmeyer and Dr. Hans Jacobs have assisted with Dr. Carol Devore's translation of this book. She

has done an excellent job. This spring I traveled to Hardissen to meet Wilhelm, his brother Ernst and their families to have the translation published. We would like to thank Dr. Hans Jacobs for publishing the German Edition and for his assistance in publishing the English Edition.

The English translation of this book is dedicated to my father, Frederick Deloss Brinkmeyer (Fritz), in honor of his 90th birthday. In addition I would like to recognize his brothers, my uncles, Orville, Francis, Dennison and Gary. They like other family members had a significant influence on my cousins and myself.

Idaho August 2005

Marc Brinkmeyer

Foreword to the American translation

The danger that lurks in globalization is that people can rapidly forget about events and experiences right in their own area. Stories that parents and grandparents told often disappear in the flood of information now available. Faster than we ever imagined, our ancestors who knew about events or family ties are no longer with us. We might really like to know about things that happened in the past or about relatives, but we no longer have anyone to ask about them.

The local history of Hardissen is meant to preserve for tomorrow's generations a small part of what is still known about Hardissen.

The author of the book, Nicolas Rügge, and I are delighted that the descendents of the German emig-

rants obviously still have great interest in their former homeland.

We hope that a desire to visit the 'old homeland' will be awakened in many who read this book, and that these folks will establish some contacts, and will bring back to the 'new homeland' their personal impressions and experiences.

We take this opportunity to express our gratitude to Marc Brinkmeyer for his energy, and financial support, that made this translation possible.

Hardissen, April 2005

Wilhelm Brinkmeyer

Brinkmeyer farm in Hardissen, Germany

In this location the Brinkmeyer family lived for over 500 years. On the next page a few family members are

shown starting with Wilhelm Brinkmeyer whose brothers emigrated to Iowa.



View of the Brinkmeyer farm, around 1950.



Friedrich Wilhelm Brinkmeyer (brother of Gustav Brinkmeyer) and his wife Mathilde, born Schalk, around 1890.



Three generations of the Brinkmeyer family in the summer of 1950. From left to right: Magdalena, Laura, Wilhelm, Marie-Luise, Dr. Wilhelm Brinkmeyer. In the foreground the children Wilhelm and Ernst Brinkmeyer.

Brinkmeyer farm in Hubbard, Iowa, USA

Fredrick Gustav Brinkmeyer, known as Gustav, emigrated from Germany to the USA in 1883. On July 26, 1890, he purchased a farm in Hubbard, Iowa.

The farm thrived and has been in the Brinkmeyer family for four generations. Over the years, it has been farmed by Gustav Brinkmeyer, Emil Brinkmeyer, Orv

Brinkmeyer, Dennis Brinkmeyer, and Ronald Brinkmeyer. Present owners of the farm are Francis M. Brinkmeyer and Marc A. Brinkmeyer. The farm is currently leased by the Torgeson Brothers, great grandsons of Gustav Brinkmeyer.



The Brinkmeyer farm around 1960.



Fredrick Gustav Brinkmeyer (1860-1933), brother of Fredrick Wilhelm Brinkmeyer, around 1920.



The Brinkmeyer Boys. Fredrick Gustav Brinkmeyer's grandsons (1962) From left to right: Dennison, Orville, Garry, Francis, Fritz.

Descendants of Frederick Gustav Brinkmeyer (*)

who emigrated from Hardissen/Germany to Iowa/USA in 1883 at an age of 22 years

Frederick Gustav ("Gustav")

♁ June 17, 1860 † June 28, 1933 ⚭ Minnie Dubberke

children: Arthur, Martha, **Emil**, Paul, Minnie, Lydia, Dorothy, Elnora, Otto, Harry

Emil

♁ June 21, 1889 † Jan. 11, 1981 ⚭ Ida Lehmeier Sept. 30, 1914, ♁ Jan. 10, 1894 † Feb. 22, 1988

children: 1. Frederic 2. Orville 3. Francis 4. Dennison 5. Gary

1. Frederick Deloss ("Fritz")

♁ Dec. 19, 1915 ⚭ Yvonne Fosse Sept. 30, 1939 ♁ April 6, 1919 † Aug. 28, 1997

children: (a) Ronald Frederic, ♁ 1942 (b) Marc Allan, ♁ 1945

2. Gerald Orville

♁ Dec. 17, 1917 † June 2, 2003 ⚭ Majorie Landon April 9, 1946 ♁ Dec. 20, 1923

children: (a) Ann Lee, ♁ 1948 (b) Kay, ♁ 1952

3. Francis Marion

♁ Aug. 14, 1919 ⚭ Margaret Ann Kurtz, ♁ July 29, 1924

children: (a) James P., ♁ 1947 (b) Kurt William, ♁ 1954 (c) Thomas Keith, ♁ 1956
(d) John Matthew, ♁ 1958 (e) Sara Ann, ♁ 1964

4. Dennison Gustav

♁ Aug. 25, 1925 ⚭ Ruth Lucille Campbell Aug. 12, 1946 ♁ June 18, 1924

children: (a) Lizabeth Ruth, ♁ 1947 (b) Scott Dennis, ♁ 1948 (c) Jane, ♁ 1951
(d) Kristin Lucille, ♁ 1957 (e) Susan Jeanine, ♁ 1958

5. Gary Lee

♁ April 29, 1936 ⚭ Susan E. Brown March 3, 1962 ♁ Feb. 14, 1940 † Dec. 15, 1994

children: (a) Lisa Diane, ♁ 1966 (b) Andrew Scott, ♁ 1968 (c) Amy Clair, ♁ 1970

(*) brother of Friedrich Wilhelm (see overleaf)

Some Brinkmeyers of today



Family meeting in Hardissen, October 2005. On the bench (from left to right): Gary, Denny, Francis, Fritz. Behind the bench: Martina, Ruth, Peg, Vicky, Gisela, Conny, Sharon. Back row: Melva, Andreas, Renate, Ernst, Marc, Wilhelm



Gisela and Wilhelm Brinkmeyer, present owners of the farm in Hardissen, Germany.



Vicky and Marc Brinkmeyer, present owners of the farm in Hubbard, Iowa.

Foreword to German Original

The occasion for this local history was not a special anniversary or for any external reason; rather, it came about because of interest in understanding the past of the Hardissen and Lückhausen settlements better, and to document that past. Another factor in doing this project, nearly a generation after the consolidation of the communities, was the desire to keep this locality's rich previous history from being forgotten.

The project participants intended the years of hard work to result in a book. The "Ortsverein Lage des Lippischen Heimatbundes" took over publishing the edition and provided much support. We especially thank the chairmen, Mr. Wolfgang Deppe and Mr. Helmut Biere, for their involvement. We are very grateful to Mr. Walter Pfaff for letting us use several maps he himself drew, thus providing a valuable addition to our representation of the history of the settlement. Many citizens went through their private 'archives' for us, opened their photo albums up to us, and willingly provided information. Here, we thank Mr. Karl-Ernst Bökhaus and Mr. Bruno Heuer, representing all who helped.

The willingness with which financial assistance for publishing the book was provided far surpassed our expectations. In addition to a generous stipend (some 14,000 Marks) from numerous Lippe-based institutes, we also received nearly 6,000 Marks in donations from private citizens of the region. We extend our deepest gratitude to all and hope to justify your confidence and meet your expectations.

Lippischer Heimatbund, Detmold
Stadt Lage
Lipp. Landes-Brandversicherungsanstalt, Detmold
Elektrizitätswerk Wesertal Lage
Institut für lippische Landeskunde, Brake
Jagdgenossenschaft Hardissen
Lippische Hauptgenossenschaft, Lage
Volksbank Lage
Ev.-ref. Kirchengemeinde Heiden
Landwirtschaftliche Buchführungs-Genossenschaft
Lippe, Lage

Volker Bam, Hardissen
Karl-Ernst Bökhaus, Hardissen
Marie-Luise Brinkmeyer, Hardissen
Wilhelm Brinkmeyer, Hardissen
Friedrich Feger, Hardissen
Friedrich Fischer, Hardissen
Walter Kempkes, Hardissen
Klaus Niebuhr, Hardissen
Dr. Friedrich Oberkrome-Tasche, Lückhausen
Friedhelm Obermeier, Lückhausen
Jobst-Werner Reese, Lückhausen
Henny Rieke, Hardissen
Herbert Seelig, Hardissen

It is our wish that this book be well received and spark interest in our region's past, and present.

September, 1997.
Wilhelm Brinkmeyer, Nicolas Rügge

I. Natural Surroundings and Prehistoric Settlement

The countryside between Lage and Lieme, through which the Oetternbach and Bega streams flow, consists of gently rolling hills with fertile, loamy soil. As far back as the New Stone (Neolithic) Age, when humans gradually started to establish settlements, they made use of this area's favorable conditions. A few archaeological finds even show signs of earlier eras, in the Paleolithic (Old Stone) and the Mesolithic Ages, indicating that groups of 'hunters and gatherers' must have moved about in the area. To date, tools made of flint dating from that era have been found in Lückhausen as well as along the Oetternbach in Hardissen.

Permanent settlements began about 5 BC, and

were generally inhabited for several generations. People started to domesticate animals and to cultivate precursors to grain. Grain as we know it was already in the Lippe area at that time, as evidenced by pollen found preserved in bogs. We can imagine that the first thing settlers did was start plowing up the productive loamy soil and erecting dwellings near bodies of water and somewhat elevated so as not to be threatened by flooding.

The Hardissen and Lückhausen areas offered both these advantages. The exact location of the dwellings has not yet been verified, but numerous finds have established that settlements had existed here already in



Fig.1 At the excavation site in Lückhausen 1992.

the Neolithic Age. Systematic inspection of the Obermeier Bega-Terraces in Lückhausen, the moors in Hardissen (Brinkmeyer and Feger land), and other acreage in Hardissen, has uncovered a lot of crudely chipped objects and tools, including blades, scrapers, and crude chisels. In several areas, large cores, which served as the raw material for making the artifacts, were also discovered. An especially well-worked upper part of a small feathered arrowhead with re-touched surfaces was found in Lückhausen.

Lückhausen is the site of a very significant discovery. Sand excavation by the Schlegel Firma (company) in the summer of 1991, which was being watched right from the start, unearthed ceramic pieces and an iron object. The *Landmuseum's* interest was quickly sparked, and an intensive examination of the grounds began. During the next few years, many interesting discoveries were made. People had apparently lived here close to lowlands on the Bega's banks – over 2000 years ago, in the pre-Roman Iron Age, archaeology's name for the century BC. In addition to other pits and several sunken dwellings dating

Fig. 2 Contours, with field cross-section A-B (taken from topographical map 1: 25,000; original drawing by W. Pfaff). The Hardissen district ranges from over 140 meters high 'at Mount Lage', to under 90 meters at the Oetternbach stream, following the terrain's downward slope, and then starting to climb again on past Billingshausen. The Oetternbach flows through the district from south to north, emptying into the Bega at Lieme. The medieval farmsteads were all located on the banks of the Oetternbach or Bega streams. The Lückhausen part lies somewhat below the 90-meter line.



square meters high, so these are probably secondary dwellings, the remnants of the main dwellings having quite possibly fallen victim to the sand excavation. In addition to ceramics in these and other pits, bones of cattle, animal teeth, charcoal, and various metal objects were found, among them coins and a completely intact *Bügelshere* (sheep shears). Further east on the site, substantial quantities of loam and sandstone bricks were found 'in stone layers' that showed traces of the effects of heat. Most likely a potter's oven had once stood here. In 1991, the six post-holes of a large storehouse, 3 meters square, had been discovered. Right after the posts had been pulled out, four of them had completely filled with ceramic pieces. All these materials were indicative of the early Roman Imperial Period and the Tribal Migrations Period (c. 400 AD). Since a few of the shards had been burnt twice, this could have been due to a fire in the settlement.

In Hardissen, too, soil discoloration and ceramic shards are indicative of a settlement site from the pre-Roman Iron Age. This discovery was made in 1992 when Feger's land on the "Korkamp" was cleared to make way for a gas pipeline. A road with cart tracks, a

posthole, and small pieces of charcoal were also found there. Ceramic shards, of the type that turned up on one of Feger's acres along the Oetternbach originated sometime in the 3rd century AD.¹ This tract of land, on which finds of flint and bronze were also made, is known as the 'Telch farmstead'; its name recalls a past farmstead, and thus suggests a longer period of settlement in this favorable location on the low-lying banks of a stream.²

It can generally be said that from early on, the natural surroundings and favorable conditions (the waterways and the extraordinarily good soils) were inviting for settling the area where Hardissen and Lückhausen sprang up. These same terrain advantages were important for the systematically laid out and more enduring medieval settlements. Clearing of the forest began near the streambeds where the first farmers settled. The wet stream valleys were used as meadows, and the surrounding fields used for cultivation. As clearing progressed, the residents gained open pastures for their livestock, on the "Heide" ('moor') lying somewhat further west and higher.

II. Manorialism in the Middle Ages and in Early Modern Times

To a great extent, the social and the economic conditions in the Middle Ages and in Early Modern Times were strongly characterized by the feudal manor system (*Grundherrschaft*), up until about 1800. The oldest mention of the manor system in the Middle Ages occurs in a time for which only a few written sources are extant. From about 1600 on, though, a detailed picture of the farmsteads and their taxes and service or work obligations can be drawn. At that time, the Hardissen “*Bauerschaft*” (farming community) had, to a large degree, already been under the control of its sovereign ruler (*Landesherr*) from Lippe, during a time the *Bauerschaft* had very limited rights, mainly to the commonly held pastureland.

1. First Mention of Villages and Farmsteads

Nobody knows exactly when the settlements “Hardissen” and “Lückhausen” became permanent settlements. The only clues come from place names. In the 12th century, Hardissen was called “Herdereshusen” and thus has the same name element as *Lückhusen*: Everyone knows that in Lippe the names with “hausen” in them have the accent on the first syllable; the last syllable typically being shortened. The Low German forms, “Ha(r)ßen” and “Lücksen”, were also still frequently found in 17th century records, and the forms were also still used in colloquial *Platt-Deutsch* until recently. It is known that these “hausen” settlements originated in the High Middle Ages, sometime between 800 and 1000,³ during a time, therefore, when there are no extant written records of this area. In Lückhausen, there were archaeological discoveries

to indicate when it was apparently established: shards of pots, bowls, and other vessels from the 8th to the 10th centuries.⁴ The villages that come from this period are mostly named for the given/first name of the founder or the first settler, as is the case here, although neither first name is in use today: Hardissen derives from “Harte” and Lückhausen from “Lüdeke”.⁵

12th century	Herdereshusen		
	Herderehusun		
14th century	Herder(is)sen	Ludi(n)c	husen
today	Hardissen	Lück	hausen

As mentioned earlier, the layout of the settlements was determined by the stream’s course.⁶ Hardissen’s farmsteads, three on each bank, form a semi-circular or horse-shoe shape around the Oetternbach and its low banks; in Lückhausen, they lie very close to the Bega. Such loosely arranged groups of farmsteads are called “Weiler” (hamlets). In addition, two farmsteads, not part of a group, were part of the *Bauerschaft*, both of them lying on the Oetternbach, to the south of the Hardissen village. The biggest of them, Bökhaus, was named Bodeken Hus (Bödekes Haus), after the proper name of its occupant. The house named after its occupant was most likely really a rural stone fortress, which in earlier times afforded particularly good protection and, because it was fireproof, had the everyday use of bake house. A later structure from 1530, one of the last of the Lippe country fortresses, was not demolished until the 20th century.⁷ The other individual farmstead, the Lukebart (today, Bam) farm, most likely split off later.⁸

The first references to the Hardissen settlement occur in the 12th century, at a time then when Lippe sovereign rule was just being formed. There were no powerful sovereigns yet, but there were a lot of religious and secular power-holders, who possessed various rights to land and people. Thus, the earliest documents really do not deal with the entirety of the Hardissen and Lückhausen settlements, but only with individual farmsteads, or even only with just certain rights at one farmstead.

A prominent manorial lord in this area was the *Reichsabtei* (Imperial Abbey) in Herford. The extensive property is listed in a document from 1151; it is a record of the transferring of Abbey property to the neighboring *Mariienstift* (a convent) on the mountain, which was founded in 1011. This is the first occasion when estates in Hardissen (Herdereshusen) were mentioned.⁹ The property referred to was most likely what later became the Brinkmeyer No. 9 farm, whose *Pachtkorn* (grain paid as lease [tax]) ‘the nuns in the convent at Herford on the mountain’ were entitled to, as in the 17th century still, Brinkmeyer No. 9 farm’s *Pachtkorn* was the only one in the area.¹⁰

The Abbey retained the largest part of the Hardissen property; in the 12th century, five farmsteads in *Herderehusun* belonged to it. They were part of the *Haupthof* (main farmstead complex; villicus, Meier) in Übbentrup near Lockhausen, and had to provide grain, cattle, and wood taxes to the Abbey.¹¹ Names that are familiar today in the area can be found as far back as 1333 in documents: namely, in 1333, two farmsteads were in the hands of *Johannes de Vegere* (later, Feger) and *Herman Spechane* (in 1341, named *Nyebur*, later Niebuhr). In this same document, a third farmstead owner is named as being the son ‘of the long’ *Hadewige*. He is probably one and the same as

Herm(ann) Hadewiginc ministerialis in Herdessen, because “Hadewiginc” means ‘son of Hadewig’.¹² What is interesting is that he belonged to the ‘ministerialis’ class, lower nobility, and so is not to be confused with folks working the farm. Likewise, the Niebuhrs, who had an estate in Hardissen in the 14th century, were folks who were enfeoffed, as citizens of the town of Lemgo.¹³

It would appear that these old names from Hardissen – and Feger should rightly be counted among them – originally did not belong to those farming families, but rather to the enfeoffed lower nobility or town-dwellers. In time, the names of the Feger or Niebuhr farmsteads apparently were transferred to the farmsteads’ rural inhabitants.

About that time, records become more plentiful, but also more confusing, since it was typical of the late Middle Ages to have diverse lords of manors: The higher echelon property holders granted property rights to various liege lords who could then assign or resell the rights. We won’t go into detail about that here.¹⁴ Of the greatest interest to the area’s history are the instances where farmsteads can be traced forward into the present and are thus identifiable. The Herford Abbey owned the three Hardissen farmsteads west of the Oetternbach (Nos. 4-6 = Held, Feger, Niebuhr), and now the Abbey’s estate property gradually diminished as the fief-holders’ property rose. Feger’s property, just as Niebuhr’s farmstead eventually, too, was acquired by the sovereign of Lippe via the ‘Family von Quaditz’ about 1500.¹⁵ Held’s farmstead, mentioned for the first time in 1422, was legally still owned by one Elisabeth or Ilseke Doneperink of Lemgo. This property had been enfeoffed since 1456 to the prominent Cothmann family in Lemgo.¹⁶ In the 17th century, the Helds appointed the notorious “Hexenbürgermeister”

(‘sorcerer mayor’), Hermann Cothmann, to be their manorial lord.¹⁷ In 1443, the Cothmanns acquired an additional Hardissen farmstead as personal property, not enfeoffed, that had until then belonged to the Westphal family, and this farmstead was Röhr Farm No. 3.¹⁸ What cannot be verified is the ‘Scheper’ farmstead, given as a fief to Bertoldus Swarte in Detmold in 1435 by the Herford Abbey; it was farmed at this time by one Arnold Eckman.¹⁹

Besides these original source documents, there is another interesting medieval written source, a *Schadenregister* (register of damages) from c. 1409. One of the numerous wars during this time, the so-called ‘Everstein Feud’, had wreaked havoc in the countryside, and damages incurred were recorded. Bökhaus lost two horses valued at 20 ‘marks’; Lukebart lost three. Brinkmeyer (*Bringman to Hardersen*) was especially hard hit, as he not only lost livestock, but was himself *captured and plundered, the damages estimated at XXX [30] mar[k]*.²⁰

The Everstein Feud did not spare Lückhausen either. *Meyger van Ludichusen*’s place was apparently even set fire to, causing damages of 80 ‘marks’. The earliest documented reference to Lückhausen is from the 14th century; the property at Ludinchusen being mentioned for the first time in 1354. At this time, it was part of the property belonging to the northern Lippe noble family, Callendorp, and was awarded to Friedrich von Callendorp by his brothers when the family inheritance was divided.²¹ In the early 15th century, the later Niedermeier and Obermeier farmsteads still formed a single farmstead complex (a *Meierhof*).²² This *Meierhof* was granted fishing rights on the Bega stream, extending from the bridge at Lieme up to the *Hengstheide* (stallion moor). The manorial lords retained their own fisherman for this farm; the fisher-

man living in the fisherman’s cottage and farming some land.²³ In 1403, Heinrich von Callendorp succeeded his father, Friedrich, and at that time, he [Heinrich] made an agreement with his relatives, transferring the fishing property to a Lemgo town-dweller. At that time, a Henke was living at this farmstead.²⁴ It appears that soon thereafter, the *Meierhof* was divided: An upper farmstead (Oberer Hof) is first mentioned in 1428.²⁵ Eleven years later, the lower farmstead (Niederer Hof) was also documented.

In the meantime, Heinrich von Callendorp had fallen out of grace with his family and in 1433 had to give up his inheritance. So, the lower farmstead now belonged to his nephew named de Wend zu Varenholz, also from a North Lippe noble family.²⁶ The Wends, who around this time inherited the huge property holdings of their Callendorp relatives, had obtained their own farmstead in Lückhausen as early as the 14th century. This might have been what later became the Tasche farmstead, that farmstead having been mentioned in 1365 for the first time.²⁷ The property relationships around 1500 are somewhat hard to fathom, but it appears that the Oberer Hof had very early on gone to the Lippe nobleman,²⁸ but the Niedermeyer (today, Reese) and Tasche farmsteads remained part of the main de Wend property. At times, the Wends, like the *Landesherr*, granted individual rights to other feudal tenants: this explains why around 1528-1535, all three Lückhausen farmers named the Lemgo town-dwellers, the Kleinsorges, as their manorial lords.²⁹

In 1563, the sovereign became the de Wend’s heir, and this is apparently also how the sovereign obtained the Niedermeyer farm property. In 1512, Reineke de Wend had already permanently turned over the Tasche farmstead, with rights of inheritance, to the Kleinsorge family.³⁰ A special unit of the Tasche farmstead was the

once-inhabited Telch farmstead, a fief of the Abbess of Herford. In 1584, the Tasche farmstead owner had had to give the Abbess 18 bushels each of rye and oats from his 'Telchhofe'.³¹ The valuable fishing rights on the Bega were permanently transferred to the Niedermeyer farm; whereas the Hardissen farms were not entitled to fish caught in the Oetternbach.³²

In time, the large feudal manors (*Grundherrschaften*) of the Middle Ages declined. The sovereigns controlled more and more rights, and they now intensified their ruling power in increasingly extensive territories and developed early governing forms. In so doing, though, they in no way got rid of the feudal manor. On the one hand, they reconfigured it; on the other hand, they themselves acquired manorial lord rights. Therefore, the bases of the old agrarian system in rural areas persisted, even into the Late Middle Ages and Early Modern Times. The farmsteads did not actually belong to the farmers; instead, the farmers had a type of long-term lease agreement (*Zeitpacht*). And, in time, rights to additional farm property became inheritable, by means of the earlier practice of limited-term 'farm complex lease agreements' ("Meierbriefe")³³ turning into a permanent "Kolonatsrecht" ('farm stewardship right'). "Meier" (farm steward) or "Kolon" (tenant farmer) were common designations for farmers, who – in modern terms – indeed did possess their farms as "Nutznießer" ('tenant-users'), but did not own their farms outright. In this respect, a look back at the Middle Ages period, with much in it that seems strange at first, clearly shows that the unity of the period extended to about 1800. This 'persistence' of essential characteristics of the agricultural system is certainly apparent in the fact that the Herford Abbey still owned rights in Hardissen throughout the entire Early Modern Times, clear to its end. In 1802, the neighboring Nie-

buhr and Feger farms still had to pay taxes in the form of grain to it.³⁴

2. Taxes and Services

Most mention of farms in the medieval period was about the (main) property-holders, about the ecclesiastical and secular manorial lords and their vassals. But what rights did the farmers working the estate have to it? And which obligations went with the property?

Basically, in contrast to the manor system east of the Elbe, the full-fledged tenant farmers conducted their work, on their own, with their own equipment. Taxes and services they owed indicate their dependence on a *Grundherr* (for protecting their land) and most likely also their dependence on a *Leibherr* (for protecting themselves). These obligations did not have to be, nor could they always be, negotiated anew, as had most likely been the case during the turbulent years in the Late Middle Ages, when the practice of farmers making term contracts, limited-term leases (*Meierbriefe*) with their manorial lords, was widespread. In the 16th and 17th centuries, the service and tax obligations had, for the most part, become permanent and had been recorded in so-called "Salbücher[n]" ('registers of landed property'). A very old 1535 *Salbuch* is extant from the Heiden stewardship (*Vogtei*) of the large Detmold *Amt* (= regional administrative office), to which Hardissen belonged in Early Modern Times.³⁵ (By contrast, in the first *Schatzregister* (treasury register) from 1467 and in those from 1488/89, Hardissen was still part of the Brake register!).³⁶ About 1617, and again in 1644 and 1781, the entries were rewritten and the obligations recorded were increasingly more detailed.³⁷ The last *Salbuch* from the Lage *Amt*, 1855, was still valid until

the *Grundbuch* (land register) superseded it in 1889.³⁸

If we want to briefly characterize the confusing and numerous burdens [of the farmers], the inequality of the farmers needs to first be emphasized. Modern concepts of basic equality among people, or of just taxation, were foreign concepts in pre-modern times. Naturally, those who had small farm holdings owed less taxes and obligatory services than did full-fledged tenant farmers and in Hardissen, this division was particularly sharp: In some cases, there were very large farmsteads and a few small farm holdings, but no smaller-scale-farmer ‘middle class’ really. In 1617, the small-scale farmers, Wächter and Brüggemann, had no payments of grain to make, and each household had to deliver only one obligatory ‘roasting hen’ from their livestock once a year. By comparison, the significant variations in the obligations among the large farms are quite interesting. They can only be explained by their early history, that is, by the centuries-long circumstances and relationships between a specific farm and the manor that it was part of.

The relatively weak standing of the sovereign, the Count of Lippe, stood in contrast to the then very high standing of the Herford Abbey. And, in time, the manor’s power-holders gave the Abbey more and more control over their vassals, who are perceived as the real manorial lords of the farmsteads. To the farmers, these noble and town-dwelling families were for the most part, compared with the sovereign, the Count of Lippe, relatively decent *Herren* (lords). They had no other property, or just a little, so had little interest in the services that were especially unpleasant and time-consuming for the farmers to perform, [and] the noble families had charge of almost no staff of their own to enforce payment of obligations and to oversee things.

Eventually, the nobles sank into such dire financial straits that they offered farmers a chance to buy themselves free (called *Freikauf*) – and did so many years before the sweeping agrarian reforms of the 19th century.

This explains why several Hardissen farmsteads in Early Modern Times had negligible tax/service obligations. Bökhaus had the most favorable position. In the early 16th century, his lord of the manor was the Densingk family living in Bielefeld, and to whom Bökhaus, according to the 1535 *Salbuch*, paid only a set monetary amount, and annually had to give the family members five chickens and two pigs, *one fat one, and one lean one*. He only had to work for the sovereign eight days a year. And in 1568, it got even better: Bökhaus was able to redeem himself free from serfdom and from the manor.³⁹ From then on, in addition to the monetary taxes to the sovereign and the small amount of work owed to him, Bökhaus’s obligations were limited to the *Zehnte* (tithe, in grain) and insignificant amounts of grain for the sexton (Küster) and the ‘district Earl’ (Gografen). The Hardissen *Kolone* (full-fledged tenant farmers) Röhr, Held, Brinkmeyer, and Lukebart, also achieved free serf status, as did Niedermeyer and Tasche in Lückhausen. Unlike the others in Hardissen, they were exempt from the “*Erteilung*” (an inheritance tax, which depending on their property situation, could turn out to be quite high), payable when *Meierleute* died. Also, in the case of their children who married off the manor, they did not have to dissolve any “*Freibriefe*” (papers redeeming them from serfdom). 1677, Hans Niedermeyer was also able to redeem his *Kornrente* (grain proceeds obligation) on the fief that Herr de Wend zu Papenhausen obtained from the Count, and did this by paying 1080 *Reichstaler* of the debt amount and getting the remainder cancelled.⁴⁰

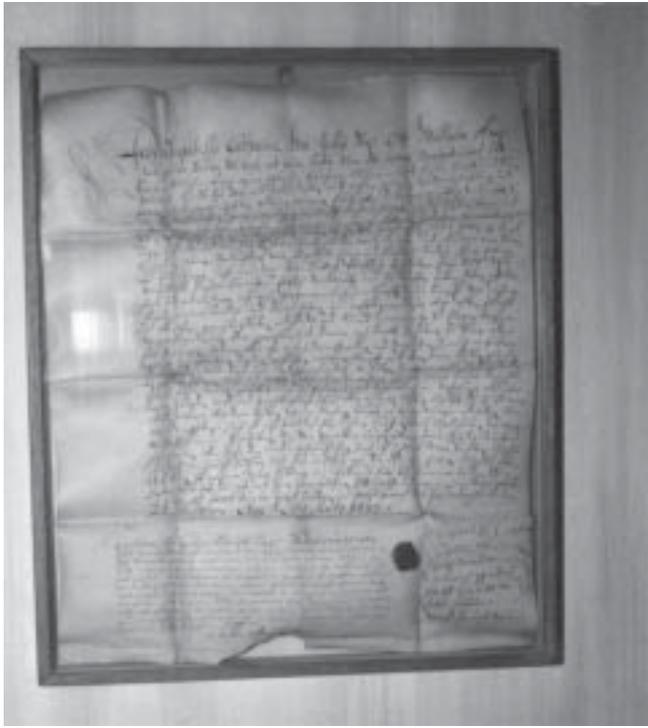


Fig. 4 The 1697 document certifying the “Freikauf” (redemption) of the Röhr farmstead from some manorial burdens; it is still in the family’s safe-keeping today.

Similarly, in 1697, by paying 650 *Reichstaler* to one of their manorial lords, the married couple Barthold and Elisabeth Röhr acquired rights to a significant *Kornabgabe* (tax payable in grain), four days of service, the *Weinkauf* (special payment to the manorial lord) and all remaining service obligations.⁴¹ In contrast, those having it the worst were the Lippe sovereign’s ‘serfs’ (“*eigenbehörig*”), as they were not free and also bound to the manor: both farmsteads

Niebuhr (in 1528, still free), and Feger from the Herford Abbey’s property, as well as Obermeier from Lückhausen and the somewhat smaller, and most likely more recent, Tappe (today, Brandsmeier) farm. Even more important than freedom from the not too oppressive feudal system was which manorial lord was to receive the grain proceeds for rent (*Pachtkorn*) and for whom would service have to be performed: In his capacity as manorial lord, the Count of Lippe demanded his farmers go to Büllinghausen or Detmold once a week, where, as *Halbspänner* (farmers with half a team of horses) they had to show up with a team of three horses, regardless of whether they were serfs on the manor or free farmers like Brinkmeyer and Niedermeyer of Lückhausen. In contrast, Held, for example, who was also rated as a *Halbspänner*, only had to work eight times a year for his manorial lord, Cothmann, and 11 times a year for the Count (as *Landesherr*), so an average of only every 3 weeks!

Fortunately, the Count only now and then demanded special services. One example: in 1678, Bökhaus and Tasche and with their neighbor Avenhaus (Heiden No. 1) were to ride into Beverungen on the Weser river, there to get a barrel of wine for the Count. Bökhaus and Tasche sent their sons, Avenhaus sent his farmhand, Hans Windt. Unfortunately, on the way there, the three had driven their wagon over the rye fields of the Corvey convent, and incurred the wrath of the convent’s farmers. As they again passed by there, on their way back, the inhabitants tried to unharness the horses. Both Hardissen men jumped down and tried to calm down the people whom they had upset. Unfortunately, in his distraught state, Hans, the farmhand, drove the team down a road that was in very bad shape, *whereupon the wag[on] turned over and the barrel of wine [was in such shape] it broke*

apart such that a lot of the wine suddenly poured out onto the ground and was ruined'. In addition to their trouble and bad luck, those who had owed the service were also saddled with a high fine of 30 Gold *Guldens*, which they protested via petition – to no avail.⁴² The hunt service obligations were more frequent, and also not liked much, by the farmers, mainly, who would certainly rather have gone on the hunt themselves instead of being mere helpers for this service owed the lord. So, sometimes they preferred to accept the fines and did not heed the call, as happened in 1667, when the Count hunted in the Horn Mark on September 7th, and Niebuhr, Brinck Henrich, Feger, Tasche, Obermeier, Niedermeyer and Tappe failed to show up there, and had to pay fines.⁴³

Important taxes were also those irregular cases when property changed hands and when “Meierleute” died. Mention has already been made of the inheritance tax and redeeming of duties, obligations, etc., as related to ‘serfdom’. There was also the *Weinkauf* due the manorial lord whenever a new *Meier* took over a farm. In the more distant past, upon that occasion, the passage of power was solidified symbolically by the new owner grasping a *fresh dirt clod cut from the farmstead’s ground and a branch cut from an apple tree on the farmstead*.⁴⁴ All of these ‘unpredictable’ taxes were prescribed according to the situation of the farm (*Kolonate*) and its debt burden, and so the amounts can provide information about the good or bad state of the farmstead. For example, in spring of 1614, the *Bauerrichter* (farmer-judge) Tappe left, – among other things – 4 horses, 4 milk cows, 1 steer [Rind], 1 calf, 3 pigs, 4 bushels of sown winter grain, (*his everyday clothes*), and assorted machinery. Unlike the period after the Thirty Years’ War, it was common that high dowries were promised, and the Count

as manorial lord also collected: At Easter, 1615, Hackemack’s daughter from Bentrup brought to Feger’s farmstead 250 Taler and ‘six each of all parts [“aller Teile sechs”] (that is: six each of cows, steers, large and small pigs), and she had to pay a fee 25 Taler, and the groom 30, for wine purchase. At that same time, Niedermeyer’s daughter from Lückhausen brought to the neighboring Obermeier farmstead no less than 300 Talers and six each of the livestock varieties, for which 30 Talers for *Weinkauf*, was demanded twice. Shortly before the 30 Years’ War, with its miseries from The Plague and from troops marching through the area, really got underway in the spring of 1629, Meyer (Jobst) of Wittigenhöfen [Leese 1] handed over 300 Talers, a horse and a “Stotten” (a yearling horse) to his son who married at Obermeier’s farmstead; and 50 Talers for the *Weinkauf* had to be paid to the sovereign.⁴⁵

The following is a table summarizing farmstead property and legal relationships in the early modern period. The number indicates the house number that was introduced in 1766 and was still legal in the 1960s. The farmstead name remained exactly the same until 1864; it had to be used in cases of men marrying into the farmstead, and even if there were completely new occupants. The next columns show the owner classes: The 1644 *Salbuch* still used a general traditional division that was according to service obligations. Accordingly, the *Vollspänner* (Vsp) worked with a ‘full’ team of six horses, the *Halbspänner* (Hsp) drove three horses, whereas the large (Gk), middle (Mk) and (Kk) small *Kötter*; only had to provide manual labor.⁴⁶ Starting with the 1781 *Salbuch*, after painstaking land surveys and assessment of all ground/soil conditions, there was a completely new set of classifications, which were set in strict accordance with the estimated

No.	Name	1644	1781	(<i>leib</i>)eigen	Grundherr
1	Niedermeyer (Lückh.)	Hsp	Vm	—	Landesherr (sovereign)
2	Bökhaus	Vsp	Vm	—	—
3	Röhr	Hsp	Vm	—	Cothmann and Lemgo Convent
4	Held	Hsp	Vm	—	Cothmann and heirs
5	Feger	Hsp	Vm	Landesherr	Landesherr
6	Niebuhr	Hsp	Vm	Landesherr	Landesherr
7	Obermeier (Lückh.)	Hsp	Vm	Landesherr	Landesherr
8	Tasche (Lückh.)	Hsp	Vm	—	Kleinsorge family, heirs
9	Brink(meyer)	Hsp	gr.Hm	—	Convent atop the mountain, Herford
10	Lukebart	Gk	kl.Hm	—	1617 Landesh., earlier Flörke
11	Tappe	Gk	kl.Hm	Landesherr	Landesherr
12	Brügge(mann)	Hp	Hp	Landesherr	Landesherr
13	Gründen/Grünnemann	—	Sk	Landesherr	Landesherr
14	Wächter	Hp	Sk	Landesherr	Landesherr
15	Sep(mann)	—	Sk	Landesherr	Landesherr
16	Brink(mann)	—	Sk	Landesherr	Landesherr

annual yields. The hierarchy was extended from the “Vollmeier” (Vm) [full-fledged farm steward], to the large, middle and small “Halbmeier” (Hm) [half-fledged farm steward], large, middle, and small “Kötter”, down to the “Hoppenplöcker” [Hp] [lit.: hops harvesters, but meaning in the 17th and 18th centuries, those who dwelled on a small holding and who, in addition to farming, had manual labor obligations to the lord], clear down to the “Strassenkötter” (Sk). The dividing line for “Vollerwerb”, those farmers who made a living completely from farming, is drawn roughly at the middle “Kötter” level.

In addition, Feger and Niebuhr still had to keep delivering additional grain to the Abbess at Herford, who indeed had once controlled their farms, and Lukebart had to do the same for the convent in Lemgo. The ‘convent atop the mountain’ in Herford apparently

had retained only negligible manorial power rights over the Brinkmeyer farm: The grain lease tax is designated in the 1644 *Salbuch* as ‘lease’ (grain), and when Brink Curt took over tenant-ownership of the farm in 1618, he stated that the farm had never provided the *Wein-kauf*.⁴⁷

Another tax was the tithe (*Zehnt*), which is not affiliated with the manorial system, the Church having originally been entitled to it. Through mortgages or other forms of transfer, this right soon ended up in secular hands. Every tenth part of the harvestable grain on the land subject to the tithe belonged to the owner, including even the ‘blood tithe’ (“Blutzehnt”) of young livestock, which in Hardissen generally meant only lambs were demanded.⁴⁸ Farmland at Lückhausen was freed of this burden,⁴⁹ but the tithe was collected from all the Hardissen farmers: Niebuhr and Lukebart paid the

Cothmanns in Lemgo (1617), everyone else paid the lords of Kerssenbrock on the Mönchshof near Barntrup.⁵⁰ They possessed these tithes by enfeoffment from the Count of Schaumburg zu Bückeburg and, for a long time, transferred them to others. Originally, the obligation amount depended on the size of the harvest, but it became the rule that those who had to pay the tithe, first had to completely harvest their grain themselves, and then only after the grain was threshed deliver a prescribed amount as ‘sacked tithe’ (Sackzehnt). When the Kerssenbrocks again started collecting on their tithe right, they began to get the grain ‘in natura’, that is, a ‘raw tithe’ form, directly from the field. The farmers affected by this change protested, leading to a lengthy legal case starting in 1731, in which the Hardissen farmers won the first round. But in 1750 the *Reichskammergericht* (Imperial Council Court), reversed the judgement and confirmed the original decision of the Lippe governing body, thus defending the claims of the Lord of Kerssenbrock.

But that was by no means the end of the matter, because now the village revolted. With curses and threats, the tenant hunter was chased off. Feger shouted: ‘I would tear to pieces the arms and legs of anyone who would dare step foot on my land and count my grain... I can only die once, and even if a hundred men were to come, I still would keep it from happening.’ Evidently Feger then called upon Niebuhr and others for help, and ‘in fact got the entire village up and on its feet’. Important to the outcome of the matter were not just these spectacular actions, but also the legal developments: And, in fact, the Hardissen residents were momentarily able to prevent the judgement from being carried out and to keep moving along new ‘pieces of evidence’. In this way, the trial kept being postponed, formally, and finally just ground to a halt in 1764. Not

until the Old Empire, and with it the Imperial Council Court, came to an end some 40 years later, were half the costs of the legal action demanded from the Hardissen farmers. They in turn refused the costs, though, on the grounds that they had never heard of these old proceedings...⁵¹

Likewise, whether they were of manorial or feudal serf-holding origin, there was one group of obligations that got a lot of discussion: those that were demanded by the Count of Lippe in his role as sovereign. In general, it is certain that these burdens became increasingly important and more and more oppressive. In addition to the tribute (*Landschatz*) that was just sporadically imposed,⁵² a multitude of smaller taxes appeared, and after the Thirty Years’ War, there was the so-called *Kontribution* (tax levy) as a permanent tax, payable monthly.

3. The “*Bauerschaft*”: Sovereign Administrative Cohesion and the Farming Community

The power of the sovereign princes had gradually been establishing itself since the High Middle Ages, partly within manorialism and partly outside the old obligatory relationships. The noble lords of Lippe, who originally resided in the area around Lippstadt, acquired judicial rights in the locality and had fortresses and cities laid out, and thus a cohesive territory gradually came about. The rulers of Lippe exercised a new kind of sovereignty over the territory’s inhabitants, independent of which manorial system they belonged to.

This expansion of the Lippe territory stood in contrast to the weakening of the manorial system, at least of that part that had to do with rights/power. In the Middle Ages, the farmsteads of Hardissen were still

apparently bound by a “Villikationsverfassung” (‘obligatory taxes/services relationship with manorial lords’) in which farmers were not free and also had to perform numerous services at the extensive Übbentrup farm complex. The period of transition saw a fading in significance of these rights of the Übbentrup *Meier*. In time, it became quite a ‘normal’ farm and ultimately paid only lease money to the Abbess in Herford, and otherwise only owed the sovereign prince the *Weinkauf* and services.⁵³ In the Late Middle Ages, the functions that the *Meierhof* had earlier performed passed to the village: The spread-out fields and land parcels could not be farmed as one pleased; rather, the tenant-farmers had to make agreements to work the fields and obtain ‘rights of way’. In addition, the use of the ‘common ground’ was regulated, as was the pastures used in common in the outlying areas of the settlement: it was during this time that the ‘village’ of Hardissen emerged from the individual farmsteads.

It is likely that during this era, sometime in the 15th century, the farmers had quite a large range of options. Contributing to this was not only the process of creating villages, through which the farm community achieved governing responsibilities and possibly even judiciary functions, but also the many crises in the Late Middle Ages: The plague epidemics emptied entire farmsteads, and in times of food shortages, left the poorer developed land with no occupants. Yet, those folks who did survive often had the chance of getting more land than before, and under better terms, because the manorial lords also felt the loss of income and, as soon as possible, they looked for new farm families to inhabit their vacant places. Unfortunately, there are no documents about what happened at that time on the Hardissen and Lückhausen farmsteads.

Written records do not start again until after the

Lippe sovereignty was permanently established and when the village had no trace of autonomy left. Instead of the previous ‘rule that included farmers’, the 16th century witnessed, for the most part, ‘rule over farmers.’⁵⁴ Even though there was a “*Bauerrichter*” (farmer-judge), he had no judicial power whatsoever, nor was he elected by the farmers. More often than not, he was under the control of the sovereign, who appointed him to the post and swore him in. The *Bauerrichter* had to fulfill supervisory and special functions for the sovereign, like having to help with tax collection, and twice a year having to report to the *Gogericht* (=Gaugericht, district court) disputes that had occurred in the village. It was also possible, though, for the *Bauerrichter* to be retained by the entire farming community if its common interest was at stake, mainly if a dispute had to do with pasture rights, which did constitute the core of the farming community. Such a case occurred at the 1671 autumn *Gogericht*, when the *Bauerrichter*, on behalf of the *Hardissen gemeinde*, preferred charges against *Feger’s shepherd for pasturing sheep on “Nienkamp” [new ground] that was not to be used for pasture after May, something that was contrary to the old law.*⁵⁵

What was meant by the term “die Gemeinde” (the community) was primarily the influential large-scale farmers: At the 1723 spring *Gogericht*, charges were filed against Brügggen Hans Henrich (No. 12), stating he *had fenced in some common ground onto his farm* (appropriated common ground for his own by extending his farmstead fence beyond it). However, *upon hearing the Meiers had no intention of allowing that, he retracted his fence somewhat.*⁵⁶ Whether or not anything like “Staatsbildung” (civil authority formation) took place in the countryside or in Hardissen mainly depended on the attitude of the powerful

village-based families. We do not know much about that. In 1690, Röhr was deemed a rebel and a troublemaker because he had taken refuge from the sovereign's *Vogt* (who was probably trying to collect money) at Herr von den Brinck's place in Iggenhausen.⁵⁷ In time, though, 'rule over farmers' was replaced with 'rule that included large-scale farmers', and when it served these large farmers' interest, they exercised rule against the small farmers and individuals with no property.⁵⁸

In the beginning, the office of *Bauerrichter* involved short-term service, which yearly, or at least after a few years, passed to another farm owner. The earliest known holder of this office was Brinck Friderich (No. 9), in 1595; after him came Nolte Tappe, Ernst Röer, Johann Luckebart, and Nolte Bökhaus, each serving short terms, until 1600, when for several decades the farmers took turns holding this office. In 1685, the *Bauerrichter* office went to Sep Henrich (No. 15) permanently, as he held the office, except for a brief pause, for 20 straight years, until his son-in-law took it over in 1709. He, too, was *Bauerrichter* for decades. Subsequently, Johann Henrich and Johann Berend Wächter No. 14 had equally long office terms and also passed the office to the next generation. The office of *Bauerrichter* then started to be held by small-farm holders more or less permanently, as a quasi second occupation, although the 'inheritability' of it over several generations was not always possible.⁵⁹ Johann Henrich Brinkmann No. 16 was named to this office in 1830, and Hardissen's last *Bauerrichter* was Simon Brüggeman No. 12 († 1919). In the end, the job was reduced to just levying taxes, since everything else was done by "Polizeidiener" Hüls in Heiden.

One task all the farmers had to do was to keep the roads in tolerable condition, and the sovereign could

also demand extra work to keep up the roads. To start with, an important roadway touched part of the Hardissen area, as it ran from Paderborn to Detmold, from there along the Ellernkrug, passing close by the Bökhaus farm, and via Hagen on to Salzuflen and Herford. In 1816, Princess Pauline traveled this route on her way to Holland, and was irritated about the road's poor condition: 'on the way through Lage to Hagen, it was bumpy, as always. At Feger's *Busch* (woods), contrary to the decrees, there was no great improvement.'⁶⁰ A smaller road actually ran through the village of Hardissen itself – this was the road connecting Lage and Lemgo, and which led to the Lieme Turm (tower), where it then branched off in one direction to Bielefeld, in the other to Lemgo, on the larger "Heerstraße" (military road). For conditions at that time, this stretch of road was heavily traveled: records from 1783 indicate it was frequently used by 40 country carts a day. In 1911, the road was improved and reinforced with stones, and in the 1930s ruts of this old route could still be detected near the present-day Lemgo highway.⁶¹

Members of the Hardissen *Bauerschaft* were obligated to improve the road from the Büllinghauser moor up to the Lage moor, and they hauled stones from Trophagen Mountain for that project. The Lückhausen farmers were responsible for improving one part of the Lemgo-to-Bielefeld *Heerstraße*, since the stretch from Lieme via Hagen to Siekkrug ran through their district. Around 1770, the Hardissen farmers also had to maintain a roadway located some distance from them, namely, the main roadway connecting Detmold and Brake, in the Röhrentrup Teich (pond) area. The principality supplied the materials, and it had earlier, even before 1770, seen to it that there was a stone bridge over the Oetternbach.⁶² The current Hardissen highway, however, had been poorly maintained up to



Fig. 6 This 1590 free-hand drawing of Caspar Schloer is the oldest extant map of Hardissen (Harsen) and Lückhausen ('Lüxsen, corrected to 'Lüxhusen'). Since this sketch was made for a legal case about field parcels, the surroundings are not shown in great detail. Yet, interesting details do show up, like the grazing sheep and the fields enclosed by fences or by hedges. The Büllinghausen Mill is identified by two water wheels. The old "Heerstraße" (military road) that ran between Lemgo and Bielefeld and passed near Lückhausen can clearly be seen ('road to Bylvelt').

the 20th century and was known as the ‘cow path’ because it mainly served livestock being herded to and from pasture.

The Büllinghausen estate, with its mill that is mentioned as far back as 1350, serves both as a relic of the older style manor and as an example of the transition to Early Modern Times.⁶³ Both had belonged to the Imperial Abbey in Herford, as did most of the Hardissen farmsteads. In 1588, Graf (Count) Simon VI received Büllinghausen as a fief.⁶⁴ His new rights as a fief-holder in Herford further increased the sphere of his rule in Lippe. According to the 1617 *Salbuch*, Niedermeyer and Obermeier of Lückhausen, and Feger, Niebuhr, and Brinkmeyer, ‘had to perform their obligatory service with their teams’ at the Büllinghausen estate. Living in such close proximity to a sovereign was not without its tensions: for example, in 1643, some Hardissen farmers thrashed the Büllinghausen shepherd, Peter, apparently because he let the sheep graze in their fields. On another occasion, Büllinghausen’s administrator charged Brinkmeyer and Feger for failing to show up when they had been ordered to harvest

grain [at the estate]; they maintained they had had some grain of their own to harvest.⁶⁵ Whereas the estate remained a self-sufficient community until 1920, for a time the mill belonged to Hardissen. It was eventually relocated to the Lieme community on April 1, 1923.⁶⁶

In general, the boundaries of the Hardissen *Bauerschaft* formed gradually, and mainly according to the relationships of the individual farmsteads lying outside the village settlement. The 1528 *Salbuch* still recorded these farmsteads under ‘Fellincksyeck’ (later, Fellen-sieck, Heßloh No. 4), ‘Auenhuß’ (Avenhaus, Heiden No. 1), and ‘Sultemeigger’ (Sültemeier, Heiden No. 2). The treasury records from 1467 and 1618, however, always list the Hardissen farmsteads of Bökhaus and Lukebart under the Heßloh *Bauerschaft*, and so differ from the *Salbücher* for the corresponding periods. Neither do the *Land* (State) treasury records have anything about these three Lückhausen farmsteads being a part of Hardissen! In the 1617 *Salbuch* both settlements are first treated as a unit.

III. Daily Life in Early Modern Times as Reflected in Documents

This next section is an attempt to capture a glimpse of the daily life of people. The numerous municipal and court records in the Detmold *Staatsarchiv* give a strong sense of the compulsory obligations that the Hardissen farmers were saddled with before the modern era, as well as the opportunities afforded them. Accident of birth greatly influenced the later course of a person's life, but despite that, a broad range of life is detectable in the biographical sketches. Also, it is not only individual people who are taken into consideration, but also bonding in families and involvement in neighborhoods – sometimes, not always smooth.

1. Biographical sketches

To a much greater degree than today, a person's life course was already determined at birth. First and foremost, people had to survive infancy and the first few years of life. An example of this is that out of the 12 children born to the married couple, Franz Barthold Niedermeyer of Lückhausen and Sophie Elisabeth Brand (married in 1738), four children died between one and six years of age; the remaining children reached marrying age. Their heritage had already determined their further life course: if the farm was prosperous, as it was in this case, the children would have large dowries that would enable them to get marriage partners of the same status. By comparison, times were hard for children of farmers who were not as strong, economically, i.e., those with small places or even no place of their own: they could only preserve their same status with considerable effort and good

luck; many lost social standing, and only a few managed to raise their socio-economic circumstances.

In the world of farming, being childless was definitely not an intentional goal. A couple blessed with too many children, though, could bring even the wealthiest farm to the brink of destruction. In 1689, the Bökhaus farm had not even paid half of ten dowries totaling over 2500 Talers. In 1714, Simon Henrich Bökhaus complained the farm had far too many children to provide them with trousseaus: there were now seven, since the eighth as heiress he had married himself; his father-in-law had six brothers and sisters to compensate with dowries, and his predecessors had left him with unpaid dowries: 'Moreover, dear God has already blessed me with 4 children, if it is His will and pleasure, I'll have even more of them.'⁶⁷ The fact that Bökhaus was not under the control of a manorial lord was in and of itself favorable for him, but in this case, it proved to be a disadvantage for the farmer. The fixed upper-limit amount for the trousseau in Lippe's "Policeyordnung" (policy regulations), applied only to the properties of the manor's *Meiers*, thus making Bökhaus, in good times or in bad, also fully responsible for the dowries of his predecessors – there was no upper limit set.⁶⁸

In 1704, Feger was angry about learning, after the fact, that he had inherited a debt-laden farm, with 12 children from two marriages living on it; he did go on to provide seven of the children with trousseaus over the next 14 years.⁶⁹ Decades-old claims often wound up being pursued by legal means. Taking justice into one's own hands also occurred. In 1628, during the church sermon, Henrich Huxholl, from near Cappel from the Röhr farm, took a horse from the barn for his broth-

er.⁷⁰ In the long run, the number of legally settled disputes was on the increase. As a rule, one's position attained at the time of marriage determined the course of the rest of a person's life. Those who had it the easiest were the heirs to the farm, that is, the oldest son, and in the event there were no sons, the oldest daughter. However, the large number of farmers who were *Leibfreie* (not bound to the manor) among the Hardissen farmers did not recognize any inherent legal right of succession for the eldest son, and were free to name any one of their children as their successor. For example, in 1671, Simon and Catharina Bökhaus asserted themselves against the bitter opposition of their oldest son, Jobst, who had already married, to keep their son from inheriting the farm on the grounds that he did not do his duty as a good son, was 'lazy and did not want to work', to the point they had to hire a farmhand for him. Even action by the *Vogt*, Henrich Dresing, on behalf of Jobst and his wife, was to no avail. Dresing suspected it was Bökhaus's parents-in-law, the elder smithy Jobst and his wife, who had *volle Regimentt* (complete charge) of the farm and were pulling strings in this dispute.⁷¹

Whoever did not have the good fortune of inheriting family property, or bad fortune, as was the case with farmers whose farms were in debt – had to hope for 'good' marriages, and this was a problem that men as well as women faced. Opportunities for marrying into a family farm were frequent, as we can tell by a look at the history of rural farms in Hardissen. Anna Elisabeth Bökhaus (c. 1684-1758), heiress to a farm, and Hans Henrich Niebuhr, born Böhmer (1648-1715), were each married four times. It was the same with Ilsabein Feger, born Meyer of Barkhausen (c. 1640-1688). Each of her [four] successive husbands died early, and even after her own death, her fourth husband took

another wife. This resulted in the Feger farm being inherited four times within the same 'generation', in the space of only 33 years.⁷²

Extreme cases like this one were, of course, the exception, but the Feger family also had three instances of death and a corresponding number of remarriages in the next two generations of owners. At the time, the heir or heiress was to come from the first marriage as stipulated in Lippe's law regarding a "Kolonatsrecht", and so he/she was not a blood relative of the married couple who turned over the farm to them. A compromise was reached between the "Meier" 'handing over control' and the "Meier" 'taking over control': the heirs did not marry until they reached 30, and so the step fathers were at least granted a few more years of running the farm and thus the income from it. In spite of that, and this is a slight exaggeration, they had married just about as they approached pensioning time.

Without the right of the eldest inheriting the farm, the transition to a new generation could have been delayed even longer. Obermeier's farm in Lückhausen was in the hands of the same generation of tenant-owners for 54 years, from 1615 until 1669, and this generation also experienced three remarriages; namely, the heir came from the second marriage, the first marriage having been childless, which slowed down the transition. Through these kinds of marriage chains, it could happen that a tenant-owner family died out, and the farm was inherited by a son or daughter from one of the remarriages. But, the family name was still retained because up until 1864, men marrying onto a farm had to take the farm's name. Only by looking at the historical context does it become obvious that modern-day Hardissen citizens did not necessarily descend from their former namesakes, instead, the li-

neage was sometimes broken when married couples who were not from there became landlords of a farm. For example, in the case of Jobst Henrich Brinkmeyer No. 9 (1779-1855), his father was not the Brinkhof farm heir, who had died early, but, rather, the second husband of his widow, Johann Christoph Avenhaus of the mill in Heiden, and the heir to the farm did not come until his third marriage, which was to Anna Sophia Niere from Wahmbeck.

The numerous marriages between certain families were densely interwoven, and this resulted in the marriage circles being circumscribed and far reaching simultaneously. On the one hand, the same names cropped up, and particularly at the large farms were the possible family ties most limited: in order for the farm heirs to be able to provide proper trousseaus for their siblings, the heir's marriage partner had to bring in a large dowry, and so the heir would only consider farms 'of the same status.' On the other hand, folks had to pay particular attention to avoid marrying relatives too closely related, preferring instead to either 'trade places' by arranging for an 'exchange' of offspring (a brother and sister of one farm marrying a brother and sister of another farm), since that saved dowries for both sides, or to find non blood relatives to marry. Also, it was not unusual for holders of large farms to locate marriage partners in 'more distant' regions – favorite choices being the prosperous Westlippe and

Ravensberg families. This is how large groups of relatives rather than small groups of closely related relatives came about. Conspicuously, the Bökhaus farm, especially since they were independent of a manor, turned toward the 'the outskirts of Lage' and to the cities for their marital ties. In 1700, when Maria Magdalena Winter from Horn was *Meierin* of the Bökhaus farm, there were brothers-in-law of the Mettengang and Brandt families in Horn as well as Schröder in Lemgo. In addition, many ties continued to be made in and around Lage, and starting back in the 18th century, members of the Bökhaus family had lived in Vlotho and Groningen.⁷³ That close feeling of being part of a circle of relatives (and neighbors) was strengthened through large-scale celebrations. That was something that would also have been necessary, because the money claims provided repeated opportunities for dispute, even within the same family. Not least of all, the festivities in fact served as welcome breaks from daily life. It was worth the cost of the fines that were imposed by the sovereign, who sought to assert his ideas of Christian honor, moderation, and behavior befitting the 'farmer class', by forbidding extravagances (*Luxusverbote*). At the baptism of the Bökhaus baby in 1605, three tons of beer were drunk, and that brought a fine of three Talers. And at the Niedermeyer-Feger wedding it was reported that there were guests enough to fill 14 or 15 tables.⁷⁴

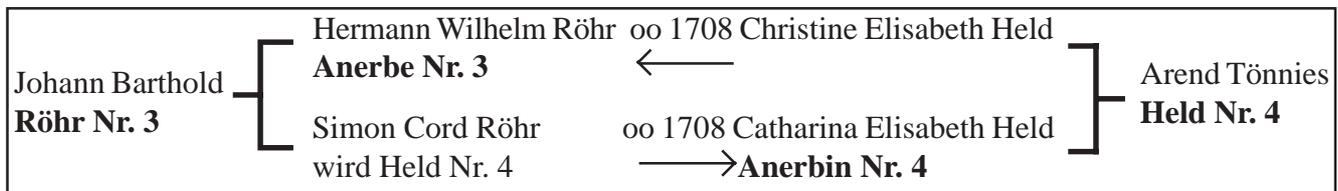


Fig. 6a Example of an 'exchange-marriage'.

Every marriage had to be registered at the *Amt*, so that potential later arguments could be averted. Hardissen was part of the Heiden *Vogtei*, which was a part of the large Detmold *Amt*. In the *Residenz* (capital), detailed statements of marriage terms also had to be recorded. As an example of this, here is an entire marriage registration from September 7, 1726: Johann Henrich, legitimate son of Johann Jost Tappe from Haßen, enters into marriage with Anna Marie, Tönnies' Brinckmeyer's legitimately born daughter, he being a serf of your honorable sovereign rule, but she free, comes to the groom, as a serf, and brings to the marriage, with consent of her brother Johann Berend, 240 Talers, 1 horse, 3 milk cows, 3 steers, 3 fat and 3 lean pigs, 18 bushels of hard grain and 18 bushels of oats, along with the usual *Brautwagen* (trousseau), and is paying 100 Talers in addition to bringing the horse, 2 cows, and 1 steer, with the remaining 150 Talers payable at 10 Talers per year. However, cattle and grain are to be provided right away. To the groom's father falls the retirement arrangements, which consists of a separate house, a plot in the garden, a pear tree located at the fence by the road, and land producing 6 bushels.⁷⁵ How meager in comparison does a *Weinkauf* from the year 1701 seem: Lucken Henrich's daughter from Lieme owed the *Weinkauf* at Sep Henrich's *Hoppenplöcker* (lit.: hops-picker) small place, but because her parents are dead and the holding completely unproductive, she can't pay all the *Weinkauf* of 1 Taler!⁷⁶

Within the circumscribed lives, there were multiple possibilities for good and for bad luck. The impressive facade of a "Halbspänner" (drives half a team) farm could be hiding poverty and bad twists of fate. The Niebuhr family during the years around 1700 will serve as an example. Hans Henrich, the late-born son of the

Böhmer farm from the Vogelhorst (bird thicket) at Lütte, was grateful to the Niebuhr farm heiress in Hardissen that she had promised to marry him. He took the matter to court, asserting himself against another of her suitors (maybe more for his family's sake, who wanted to see their son provided for).⁷⁷ The marriage in 1676 gave him the farm, but that by no means meant that he would have luck with it. For whatever reason, whether because his father-in-law made life difficult for him or perhaps because he became depressed over the early death of his wife, at any rate, soon Niebuhr 'often did not report to the farm for 4 or 5 days, instead spending his time eating, and drinking alcohol, as well as playing cards' (somewhere else)...⁷⁸ His deceased wife had 'left an estate to a drunkard... and a debt-encumbered farm, one from which the esteemed sovereign administration received almost nothing, and had to resort to placing diligent people on the farm.'⁷⁹

However, finding someone who could be trusted to do this task was no easy job. And it came as no surprise when young Tönnies Upmeier from Uphof near Währentrop lost his nerve at the last minute. The elder Hans Niebuhr finally found another candidate, from among relatives in Heesten, who was willing to take over the farm.⁸⁰ In 1694, after only 18 years of running the farm, Hans Henrich Niebuhr turned over control of the farm to his daughter and young son-in-law. He was not allowed respectable retirement housing and arrangements, but instead had to move to the horse barn, and even that, the *Amt* did not want to grant him. He was now called the 'middle Niebuhr', because older Niebuhr was still living, and young [Niebuhr] was now the third in the group. Circumstances were not in the new *Meier*'s favor, and in very little time, as his father remarked bitterly, he [the young Niebuhr] soon joined his father-in-law in drinking. As young Mrs. Niebuhr

Wöchentliche Mindensche Anzeigen.

Nr. 52. Montags den 30. Decbr. 1793.

I Citationes Edificiales.

Da der alhier geborne Tischlergeselle Johann Friedrich Korf im Frühjahre 1775, im 19ten Jahre seines Alters auf die Wanderschaft gegangen ist, und seit dem 22sten Febr. 1778, als er sich in Münster aufgehalten, und von dorten nach Wien zu reisen gelohnen gewesen, von seinem Leben und Aufenthalt keine Nachricht gegeben hat; so wird derselbe, oder dessen etwaige Erben und Erbwehmen hienüt öffentlich verabladet, sich binnen neun Monaten spätestens in Termino, den 1sten Martii 1794 auf dem hiesigen Rathhause zu melden, und von seiner Abwesenheit Rede und Antwort zu geben, widrigenfalls er für todt erklärt, und sein hinterlassenes Vermögen seinen brüderlichen Geschwistern zuerkannt und abetlassen werden soll. Mindens den 2ten Mai 1793.

Magistratus. hieselbst.

Des Hochgeborenen Grafen und Herrn, Herrn Ludwig Heinrich Adolph, Grafen und edlen Herrn zur Lippe, Souverain von Wianen und Ameiden, Erbburggrafen zu Utrecht etc. Ritter des Hessischen goldenen Löwensordens, Curator und Kanzler des Administrators, Wir zu Höchstderstellten Consistorio verordneten Commissarii Generales fügen hienüt zu wissen, daß die Colona Niebuhrs Nr. 6 zu Hardissen hiesigen Amtes Detmold bey uns klagbar zu

berathmen gegeben, daß sie ihr Ehemann der Wellmücker Niebuhr schon vor 4 Jahren ddselber Weise verlassen habe, ohne jedoch einige Nachricht von seinem Leben und Todt erhalten zu können, mit gehorsamster Bitte; sie der Ehe halben von ihm zu entbinden und ihr anderweite Verheyrathung zu gestatten. Wann nun hierauf gegenwärtige Edictal Citation zuvorderst erkant werden, als haben Wir vorbezagten Wellmücker Niebuhr Nr. 6 aus Hardissen hiers durch auf den 20ten Janu. künftigen 1794 dem Jahrs dergestalt vor, daß derselbe an diesem Tage Morgens zu rechter früher Tageszeit vor hiesigem Consistorio in Person erscheinen, auf die gegen ihn angebrachte Ehescheidungs Klage antworten und weitere Verhandlung pflegen, auch endlich die richterliche Entscheidung anhören, oder aber gemärtigen solle, daß im Ausbleibungsfall auf weiteres Ansehen seiner Ehefrau nichts desto weniger fortgeföhren und was Nothwendig ist, in contumaciam gegen ihn gesprochen werden solle. Sign. Detmold den 23ten Jul. 1793.

Höchstl. K. P. Consistorium alhier.

II Sachen, so zu verkaufen.

Amst Ravensberg. Auf Anbringen eines ingrossirten Gläubigers solten die des Wittwe Haldemanns in Halle gshörten Grundstücke, welche aus einem

8 f f

Fig. 7 This official announcement demanded that Colon Niebuhr, who had run off, return, and it cleared the way for his wife to remarry. The text appeared not only in the paper, "Lippischen Intelligenzblättern", but also in the weekly paper, "Mindensche Anzeigen", which served the neighboring Prussian area.

wrote in 1703, the farm was already in bad shape when she got married, and at 16 years of age, she was not able to do a proper job of taking care of such a large farm estate. The many *Meiers* on the farm complex often made her husband even more ‘desperate, bringing on depression and a bad mood’ and this then drove him to drink large quantities of beer and from time to time get drunk. Although he bore no guilt for the farm’s misfortune, the sovereign’s administration took him into custody for being ‘someone who caused his estate to fall into ruin’ and sentenced him to *Karrenschieben* (pushing carts); after about four weeks, his wife could not possibly do without him any longer.⁸¹

In 1715, the farm was ‘in total ruin’.⁸² For a long time, it remained in dire economic straits. It is probably no coincidence that this fate befell one of the sovereign’s tenant properties with comparatively unfavorable tenant rights.⁸³ The end of the 18th century witnessed a recurrence of these tragic incidents when the newly married *Meier*, Niebuhr, started drinking excessively⁸⁴ and ended up abandoning his farm, never to be seen again. In 1793, his unfortunate wife had to publicly advertise that her husband had, in a despicable way, deserted her four years earlier, and she had been unable to get news of whether he was alive or dead.⁸⁵ Since Niebuhr did not show up within the time given, the marriage was dissolved, and so she could remarry. Not all the sons and daughters, even in Hardissen, though, had opportunities to marry into a farm or even a small holding. And it was extremely rare to be able to start up a new *Kolonat* (tenant-owner farmstead), because the land was all allotted to others: the existing parcels of land were not permitted to be subdivided, and it was rare for the sovereign to grant permission for a part of the common fields to have dwellings put on it.

In principle, the basic rule that held sway at the time was that folks married only if they could have a ‘place’ that could assure a ‘living’. Nevertheless, a few took the step of starting their own household without having their own property, as so-called “*Einlieger*” (hired hands living on the premises) who performed chores for the farm landlord in exchange for a place to rent. Without their own land for feeding their families, the *Einlieger* had ‘to make a living by manual labor’, as their social level was usually referred to. Whenever possible, they rented land parcels from debt-burdened farms. *Einlieger* were not necessarily reduced to begging, though: it was not unusual for them to have at least some money owed them by various farmers, and if they themselves had come from a farm, they might have had portions of a dowry to collect. Frequently, though, they not only had no land, but also had no place of their own in which to live, especially when they got older and were no longer earning a living by manual labor. In the 1659 marriage record of a widowed Hardissen *Einlieger*, it states: ‘[they] bring nothing, only the mutual comfort they provide each other.’⁸⁶ This ‘comfort’ was needed precisely because the renter had no ‘pensioner housing’: On the farms – and a variation of this on a smaller scale on the smallholdings – a certain portion of the farm yield was designated for the pensioner.

The smaller the property, the less secure one was about being cared for in old age. Only the large farms provided a dwelling place for their own pensioned family members. If such farms had no pensioners, then the dwelling could be rented to an *Einlieger*. Former *Meiers* had a legal right to be provided for; it was strictly regulated in the marriage records in order to avoid disputes, like that of the previously mentioned stipulation about Tappe’s pear tree. Whether the

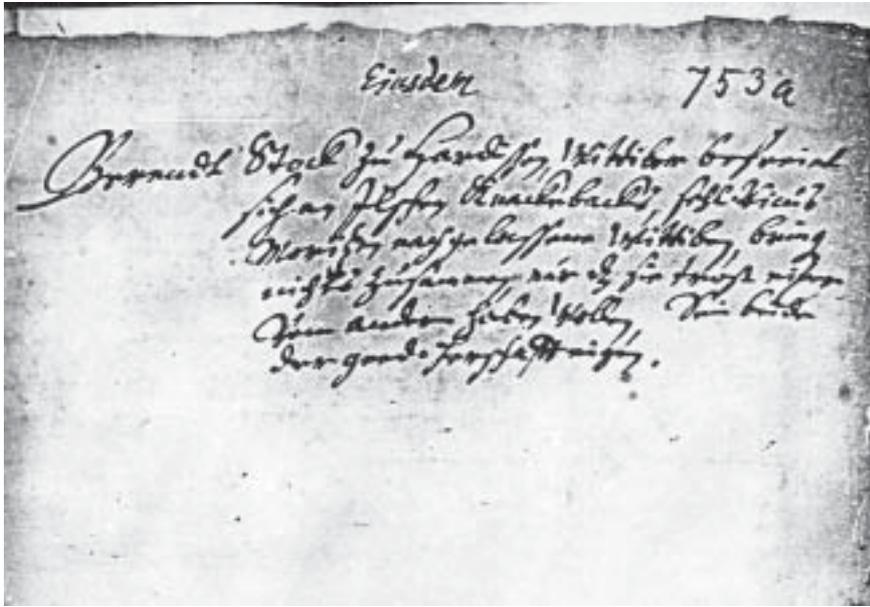


Fig. 8 The marriage record of the Einlieger widower, Berendt Stock, and his wife, Frau Ilschen Knakeback, widow of Ricus Moritz, 1659. Both want only 'mutual comfort from one another' and 'bring nothing else' besides that.

deceased heir or heiress had in fact had a separate pensioner dwelling or lived under the same roof as their children, played a role in figuring the inheritance taxes. In 1675, records show that elderly Mrs Tappe 'had lived with and been supported by her son after her husband's death'; and in 1707, elderly Herr Obermeier of Lückhausen 'vacated the pensioner dwelling a few weeks before the end of his life' and moved in with his son.⁸⁷

2. Neighbors: Cohesion and Conflict

In past centuries, people had to rely on one another in any number of ways. In order to run a farming operation, a large number of permanent and seasonal workers, over and above the family of the *Meier*, were needed. Those who did not have enough livestock for

working the fields had to ask others to help provide teams for plowing. Relatives and neighbors really did have to be called upon during emergencies, like when someone's house burned down, someone got sick, or even when a draught animal died suddenly. 'Routine life' could really only succeed when all did their part: In order to harvest yields that could provide a living and bring in enough to cover taxes, fields and woods, livestock and equipment had to be tended to carefully and properly. Contrary to widely held ideas of simple and easy rural living that required no particular knowledge, agriculture, even prior to the modern period, required knowledge and expertise that was passed down from generation to generation. Even tasks that appeared trivial could have huge effects and were important for assuring a harvest took place, and that meant survival.

Without working together, that survival was impos-

sible: this shows one side of the early modern world. The other side, however, involved a constant battle for a few of the properties, as is true also in a society where everything, even food, is in 'short' supply.⁸⁸ Some of the entries in the *Gogericht* (district court) records may sound trivial to us today, but in those days they could trigger bitter fights: a person drove a loaded harvest wagon through another person's grain field or rode his horse through the field, or livestock were not properly herded and damages resulted (in Hardissen this meant especially damage caused by shepherds with their huge flocks of sheep), oak trees were cut down without permission, dogs ran people's livestock to death, a person plowed up another's land or had rights-of-way legal disputes. It was not until more recent times really that one 'cleared up countless numbers of disputes by careful land surveys, registering land, and making entries in the land register.'⁸⁹ And so the neighbor would react all the more sharply to alleged discrimination, holding the opinion that there was only a limited amount of property, and this then meant that the well-being of other folks inevitably would mean his own ruin.⁹⁰ When, ultimately, it came down to one's daily bread, it should not surprise us that some reactions could be violent. In 1664, Sepp Johan (No. 15) registered a complaint that Röer had cursed him, 'putting the devil in him', to which Röer replied that Sepp Johan's sow had damaged his *Kuhkamp* (cow pasture). During that same time, Niebuhr's fed-out pigs had wreaked havoc in Feger's rye and his acorn fodder, and so Feger 'sent his farmhand to Niebuhr's farm'. Niebuhr then just went completely crazy, grabbed the farmhand by the neck and, apparently, 'intended to choke him to death.' Later, Niebuhr defended himself by saying: 'Yes, it was true that he had touched the farmhand on the neck, but had in no way thought

about harming him.'⁹¹

Popular occasions for fighting with one another were large festivities, especially weddings. It got dangerous when firearms, in addition to alcohol, came into play. In 1616, Feger, as *Bauerrichter*, had to boldly intervene: 'Henrich of Krentrup behaved violently at the marriage of the *Meier* of Lückhausen' and 'intended to harm the young *Meier* of Poppinkhusen with his firearm [Bussen], whereupon, Feger took the gun from him and gave it back to him the next morning'.⁹² The following year, however, the authorities did nothing when the betrayed Mrs. Bökhaus beat up the woman with whom her husband had committed adultery. We read that 'Böckhuses' wife hit Putt Ilschen, a loose woman (whore) on account of Mrs. Bökhaus' husband, on the head, causing a gash. A note near the entry reads: 'Ex iusta ratione' (on legal grounds), and so the 'charge was cancelled'!⁹³

Things did not go well for Johann Brinckmann from Lage either: When he went to Lukebart's farm to try to collect some outstanding debt, the farm dog 'bit him in the leg very 'schlubisch'' and that kept Brinckmann bedridden for two weeks, and for three months he had to use the services of an unqualified doctor. In 1738, Niebuhr's wife registered a complaint that Feger 'was hateful to her and had beaten her black and blue, and had to have someone get her a doctor'; and after Hans Henrich Brüggemann had been in a wild fight, surgeon Theopold certified which wounds he had on him.⁹⁴ These examples show that even in Early Modern Times, a doctor was sometimes called in, although it was not always the case that this was a fully certified medical doctor: In 1668, Johann von der Brügge's (Brüggemann) wife had a bad accident and was lamed, so he summoned the *Scharfrichter* (executioner). Since the education and occupational practice of physician

was barely regulated, naturally they had competition from other 'folks knowledgeable about the human body', not least of the all, the executioner. Master David was not able to help in this case, however.⁹⁵

The infamous 'witch trials' can also be seen in the context of the battle for land/property that was in short supply.⁹⁶ In the 18th and 19th centuries, we mainly find [records of] comparatively rational fighting with words and fists. However, years before ideas of sorcery had been widespread and were slow to die out among farmers who were at the mercy of natural powers for their livelihood. Supposedly, at Lukebart's farm, up until 1840 (according to brickmaker Lambracht of Hörstmar), 'the horses all had brass crosses hanging down on their faces, for warding off witches,' he said.⁹⁷ In the 20th century yet, a woman from Tappe's farm was sought, supposedly, for 'casting spells'. The old Lippe word 'Büiglawe' (supplemental belief – Beiglaube) accurately captures these sorts of things: our ancestors did not want to be superstitious since that did not mesh well with their religious views; however, they just could not completely rid themselves of their belief in witches and ghosts, and this had to do with 'nummersicher' (never being totally sure of something). *Büiglawe* was a way to strike an internal compromise, as in this saying: Belief in God is good; with supplemental belief, it's even better.⁹⁸

At any rate, the oldest 'witch trial' can be understood as a dispute over valuable cattle that transpired via means of sorcery. The owners of the cows had no other clear explanation for the death of the livestock other than that they were maliciously cursed. As far back as 1552, 'Hol Grete' from Hardissen had been accused. It was alleged that she wished bad things to

befall farmer Feger, and so then had put this curse with a double meaning: 'You may be wide now, but you'll soon become narrower'. Grete then apparently sprinkled powder in front of Feger's cow barn and in so doing cast a magical spell on the cattle. They said she had to be in league with the devil in order to know how to do that. In the end, she was probably executed.⁹⁹

When it came to the second witch trial we know about in the Hardissen community, however, there was no attempt to get at causes of the alleged sorcery; and this time, it was more about municipal, not rural, conflict. Namely, the case took place in Lemgo, where the persecutions were known to have lasted much longer than in the rest of Lippe. It was in Lemgo that the school teacher, Beschoren, was executed after having first named, under torture, various students whom he had allegedly instructed in sorcery. Among those named were the two oldest sons of Niedermeyer in Lückhausen; the father, wanting his progeny to get a good city-based education, had not ever anticipated that anything bad might happen. New trials followed, and from time to time, Beschoren's pupils confessed. One boy was even executed, and after that the others got scared and recanted. In 1659, most of them, including Niedermeyer's sons, were thrashed with rods and then sent back to their parents.¹⁰⁰ But it appears as if something 'got caught.' Some of their siblings married into large farm families, but there is nothing at all in the records about the two oldest boys. Contrary to the order of inheritance, Niedermeyer's property was not inherited by them but by the boys' half-brother, from their father's second marriage.

IV. Settlement and Economy

Our look at the developing settlement's social and economic activities now takes us into more modern times. The basic structure of the *Bauerschaft*, with its many large farms and some small places, persisted until late in the 19th century. Common land still remained after the subdivision, and was primarily cultivated farmland: The area became more densely populated only after two settlement spurts, one after 1864; the other since 1949. Since then, the 'Hardissen moor' has stretched out clear to Lage, and far surpassed the original village in numbers of houses and inhabitants. Situated some distance away from the still growing residential area, the old village and Lückhausen to this day still retain the look and character of their productive agricultural heritage.

1. Farmers, Einlieger, and the Development of the Settlement

In order to explain how the Hardissen settlement developed, we need to recall an important qualification of the tenant farmer with a *Kolonatsrecht*, which prohibited any subdivision of the property. As a consequence, for the most part, the number of farms and *Stätten* (small places) did not change, and this led to a rift between those who possessed a *Kolonat* (farm land, property) and the *Einlieger*. Given the population growth since the 18th century, the system prohibiting subdivision was increasingly questioned. Around 1850, Hardissen's social structure corresponded roughly to what it was at the end of the Middle Ages. The three farm operations in Lückhausen, and the individual Bökhaus and Lukebart farms, were just as they

had been earlier. The same was true of the core places of Hardissen, the Röhr, Held, Feger, Brinkmeyer, and Tappe farms. The later Brüggemann farm, named *Stätte* No. 12 had split from the Tappe farm around 1500, and today it still sits across from the 'Brügge' (Brücke; bridge) over the Oetternbach. Only a few small places had actually been added; and all of them belonged to the sovereign. In 1595, Brinkmeyer had received permission to give his brother-in-law, Cord, a piece of land. Cord was apparently a "Wächter" (guard): it is quite possible he had to assume the job of guarding the village, given that his *Stätte* No. 14 was located where the stream could be forded, and so was strategically important.

In 1657, Hermann Wrampe, an *Einlieger* from Heßloh, received from his father-in-law, Tappe, instead of a dowry, the field parcel 'on the grounds' [auf den Gründen], and Wrampe later called himself 'Grünnemann' (No. 13, now the Fischer farm). Nine years later, *Einlieger* Sepp Johann, or Backs Johann, received a *Stätte* supposedly on former pasture land or a meadow near the Oetternbach (No. 15, moved later because it was too wet there). Finally, in 1719, Jacob Henrich Brink was also granted permission to start his own place on the former commons. The family then changed its name from the original Brink farm (No. 9) name to *Brinkmann* (then, via a later marriage into the farm, the place just happened to get the name Brink back, and is now No. 16, *Gärtnerei Brink* (florist shop and nursery). These remained exceptions, though, that were most likely available for the son of a farm *Meier*. There is little doubt that because of the powerful families of the large farms during the next

nearly 150 years the settlement did not expand. It is hard to imagine any clearer indication of their power and despite periodic slumps in individual operations, their relatively consistent prosperity. Lückhausen stayed a settlement of three farms, and Hardissen stayed, as it had been, a farming village, comprised almost entirely of full-time operations.

Even after the common ground was divided up, settlement of the newly created farm parcels on the moor proceeded quite slowly: In the 1860s, only three new *Stätten* were started when, in 1864, the *Ziegelmeister* (master mason), Karl Brinkmann No. 16, subdivided his property. Next came Helle, an *Einlieger* on the Wächter's land, in 1875. Since the 1880s, the Hardissen moor started to get more densely populated. By 1901, there were already 40 house numbers, and this is about the level the community stayed until the middle of the 20th century. The settlement's development thus reflected economic conditions only to a certain extent. The decades following the Thirty Years' War must have been extremely difficult due to the lingering effects of the plague and plundering. However, most of the Hardissen farms were able to maintain their standard of living even though some of them occasionally did not escape economic plight. In 1661, Brink Henrich on No. 9, petitioned to cancel his tax debt and asked for a two-year reprieve on taxes. He stated that his father had died when Henrich was a child, much land was mortgaged to others, and the farm, deeply in debt, had been arid and desolate for 20 years, during which time 'nary a cat nor a dog' had been 'on the farm', and, on top of that, three buildings had collapsed and 'were completely gone.'¹⁰¹

During this period, even Bökhaus was encumbered with oppressive debt, although he had particularly good property rights. But the fact that he could specify

dowries as high as he wanted, and could also mortgage land without a manorial lord's permission, now worked against him. Bökhaus could think of no other way out from under the debt than to lease one parcel of farmland after another, in exchange for cash money. When, in 1689, his brother-in-law, Johann Adolf Schröder, a Lemgo citizen, demanded Bökhaus pay the outstanding dowry debt for his wife, an interesting correspondence transpired between the adversaries in the suit or, as the case may be, their lawyers: Schröder declared that the farm and all its possessions probably totaled close to 6000 Talers. Bökhaus: 6000 Talers? 'Sure, if it were located in Bremen, Hamburg, or Amsterdam, that could well be..., but no [debt-] burdened and "contribuabel" (lease) property between Lemgo and Lage is worth that.' The debt load from the war had grown too large in the last 20 years, so that even the best of those carrying it were suffocating. It would also be desirable [he noted] for the parents themselves to meet their own *Auslobungen* (promises) and not burden their successors with them. To which Schröder replied that in Amsterdam the farm could probably bring 'a few tons of Dutch gold,' and he offered to buy the estate for 5750 Talers; that from such a piece of property, a farmer could live like a king, if he didn't carry on like a baron or a high-level nobleman; and a farmer's wife does not have to walk around like a noblewoman in her fine white shoes in a cow pen and manure pit.¹⁰²

These obviously exaggerated characterizations are made for the sake of the argument, of course, and used to set Bökhaus within the context of a life in transition and should not be taken literally. However, it does raise the question: How much should the many complaints by the farmers be trusted? How prosperous the Hardissen farmers were since the inception of Early

Ich Hanß Böck Huß dieß Ding das ich habe bekommen für
 mich und meine Hanßweib und Lohne daß ich
 auß mein begeren von meinem jehetiger Jochan Hanß
 Licker beide an fide und brud Lohne und an davon gelde
 In Dinsten jehetiger ligen fuchen daß ich dieß fette ligen ist
 angekauft worden auß die sume 80 fl sage außzig Daller
 in jehetiger gantze ligen meine waldes auf das sie abhalten
 2 fische ländel ^{dieß fische ländel} In jehetiger fische 40 fl daß sie die so lang
 nung sume wille ich zu gebühren facht daß die auß
 ge lichten 80 Daller bezalt facht wille ich aber von
 beides fuchen einig sein so bald ich oder die Meinigen
 40 fl haben auß dem ein fische wieder zu zu ligen
 und daß ein bezalt auß die ligen geß bezaltung facht
 dieß facht und ligen zu facht daß wegen ich In dem beß
 falden gegewen so gegewen auß dem beiden facht
 In Jahr 1698 In 2. November

Hanß Böck Huß
 Mein Eigen Hanß

Fig. 9 In 1698, Hans Bökhaus bor-
 rows 80 Talers from his brother-in-
 law Lukebart and designates two
 parcels of land on the Wiesebreden
 for him. Bökhaus, deeply in debt,
 had dealt with such documents so
 often that he could even draw up a
 document himself. Apart from some
 spelling idiosyncrasies, he knew the
 language of his time for such docu-
 ments: 'I Hanß Böck Huß make
 known' and declare ... to uphold
 this resolutely and honorably, and
 so have written and signed this letter
 myself at the Böken house in the
 year 1698, 1 November. Hanß Böck
 Huß.'

ModernTimes is difficult to judge, and would necessitate very complicated calculations of input and output. In 1777, at any rate, the pensioned farmers Niebuhr, Bökhaus, and Lukebart could enjoy the luxury of ‘drinking forbidden coffee,’ something which the sovereign rule considered unseemly for simple farmer-stock folks to do¹⁰³ and that, by virtue of it having to be imported, hurt the Lippe economy. A favorite local product, though, was *Branntwein* (spirits). There is no doubt that the Hardissen farming community was the wealthiest community in the Heiden *Vogtei*. According to the 1781 tax records, Hardissen’s annual tax revenue almost equaled that of the village of Heiden, and Hardissen brought in almost a third more tax revenue than did Hörstmann, over twice as much as Heßloh, and more than five times as much as Trophagen.¹⁰⁴ However, the numerous land mortgages paint an equally clear picture. In 1740, even Held’s farm had to be “eloziert” (leased out) for many years, that is, completely “ausgetan” (leased to others) because it was too far in debt, and its administration had to be taken over by others. The *Meier* was left with only a little land and his house.¹⁰⁵ Bökhaus, too, after a period of recuperation, was bankrupt in 1778. The family was fortunately able to keep possession of their farm because the arranged auction resulted in bids that were too low, and the sovereign refused them. Bökhaus’s son took over the property under the stipulation that his father-in-law, Tasche, of Lückhausen would supervise him and provide him with guidance, as Tasche was known as a good manager and intended to take over responsibility for the debts.¹⁰⁶

During the period of the “Meierrecht” and the close integration of most of the farms in the manor system, it was precisely this capacity of the individual tenant farmers to conduct business that carried meaning. Far-

mers had had to be quite good with calculations because of the taxes and the dowry obligations/debts for their children, etc., and good bookkeeping had been paying off as far back as the 17th century. When, in 1682, Jobst Obermeyer of Lückhausen was faced with some unpaid obligations, he took a look at the account books of his deceased father, and found that most of the money had been paid long ago.¹⁰⁷

One person’s sorrow can be another person’s joy: The renting out of farms to avoid losing them and mortgaging always worked out well for *Einliegers* since it afforded them a chance to lease land. The only other means of making a living was as a day-laborer or by spinning thread. As far back as 1619, *Einlieger* at the Held and Brink Curdt farms engaged in this mainly rural home-based work.¹⁰⁸ In 1658, Backs Johann’s wife spun yarn; the following was recorded about the couple: . . . ‘they are poor people and have a miserable, dilapidated dwelling.’¹⁰⁹ Spinning was an important source of money for mainly the extremely poor families, since acquiring an expensive loom was considerably beyond their means. In 1776, three out of four of Hardissen’s *Einlieger* families and several pensioners earned money by spinning yarn, but the looms were almost exclusively operational on and for use by the large farms; Johann Henrich Seppman (No. 15) was the only farm selling linen.¹¹⁰ *Einlieger* who had come from farms and had large dowries might also have some of their own money. It was more often the case that there were unpaid dowry claims and they got land to work and use until the debt amount was reached. For example, the ‘Ihnliegerische’ (*Einliegerin*) Annike Bökhaus bequeathed a total of 228 Talers to various people in 1628, in addition to leaving at the Bökhaus farm her deceased husband’s dowry plus an additional 100 Talers.¹¹¹ In 1647, Hermann Wrampe (from the



Fig. 10 Entrance of Herbergstraße that borders on “Fegers Busch” Spa.

large farm No. 3 in Heßloh), Krahmer Anneke, and Backs Johann were all *Einlieger* in the Hardissen farming community, as well as Gottschalk Luthman Heldt Johann’s wife, in 1662. Of the nine *Einlieger* households in 1730, six of them were so poor they were not required to pay taxes. The fact that many of the male and female farmhands only were known by their first names and did not have a ‘name of a household’ called attention even more to their subordinate status, such as Cord at Helt’s farm, Gerdrut at the Wächterhaus.¹¹² The number of *Einlieger* increased as the population gradually increased, because, of course, in Hardissen new *Stätten* were not allowed. In 1828, there were 22 *Einlieger* households, compared to just four in 1776.¹¹³ Despite the agrarian reform circa 1800, *Einlieger* in the community who had no pasture land and

no voice in community matters were still a long ways away from being ‘renters’ with equal rights.

According to the address list of 1901, mostly one or two brickmaker or day-laborer families lived on the Hardissen *Bauerschaft* farms. In 1905, there were 81 households in the *Bauerschaft* distributed across at least 64 residences – a ratio that was better than in other communities.¹¹⁴ Circa 1900, the *Bauerschaft* had 440 inhabitants; of that number, 128 were living on Hardissen moor (1895), and 10 years later that figure had grown to 158. During the following decades, the number stayed about this level, and in the 1930s, it decreased slightly. The number of inhabitants rose again later, first because of events associated with the war, with families from the Ruhr area being evacuated to Hardissen, and housed there; and then after 1945,

Fig. 11 Housing on Fontane and Mommsen streets.



refugees or displaced persons from the eastern part of Germany came here. Out of 730 inhabitants in 1954, some 230 were classified as ‘displaced from their homeland’. Although the increase was mainly due to the influx of refugees and displaced persons, the sheer size of residential areas also offered families from the Lippe region new places to live. Since agriculture in and around Hardissen still remained important, the development sites were concentrated on the less productive land, the former Hardissen moor’s common pasture. This resulted in the ‘dual look’ to present-day Hardissen: the agricultural settlements of Lückhausen and Hardissen with more or less their old structure and then a modern housing development that arose on the community’s periphery, long since merged with neighboring Lage. The new area consists of single-family re-

sidences and row houses that are typical of houses in the German Federal Republic. If and whenever larger ‘residential blocks’ were planned as in 1960, and the last time, in 1989, the *Gemeinde* Council and the *Stadtrat* (town council), respectively, prevented their construction.¹¹⁵

Inhabitants¹¹⁶

1609	142	1954	730
1776	176	1962	750
1828	294	1968	935
1895	442	1974	1016
1905	439	1980	1300
1926	435	1989	1289
1934	389	1997	1712
1939	405		



Figs. 12/13 Houses in the new development, seen from Gorch-Fock Straße and Theodor-Storm-Straße.



Fig. 14 View from Kleistweg.



2. Agriculture and Village-based Industry in Transition

The older division of the Hardissen land (from former manor/estate land) is documented in a map drawn up in 1731 by the land surveyor, Friemel. The biggest chunk of the estate was awarded to the Hardissen large tenant-owner farms, in the form of larger or smaller parcels or strips of fields in the *Gemengelage* (mixed crop land). These fields were mostly clustered around the center of the old area. Larger areas of land that bordered the *Bauerschaft* were used as ‘commons’, that is, commonly held pastureland – to the West, Hardissen moor; to the East, portions of the Büllinghausen moor. The Lückhausen farms got a similar arrangement, getting field parcels adjacent to the Lückhausen moor southwest of them, and bordering the Hardissen common land.

The most important area for the Hardissen farms was the 55.4-hectare Hardissen moor and its 323 bushel yield. Farmers living ‘on the other side’ (west) of the Oetternbach were permitted to herd their horses, cows, cattle, pigs, and geese to pasture there. Hardissen farmers ‘on this side’ of the stream, that is, Röhr, Brinkmeyer, Tappe, Brüggemann, Grönnemann, and Wächter, were only permitted to pasture horses and livestock with horns there, and they mainly used the jointly held pasture on the small and large Büllinghausen moors. For the most part, Bökhaus was directed to use his own areas and had only a small part that adjoined the Hardissen common pasture, but was also permitted to graze 50 sheep on the Lage moor. Lukebart had a share in the pasture rights on the Hardissen, Lage, and Heide moors. He paid a grazing fee to be able to pasture on the Heide moor, but it was hard for him to get his money’s worth from the more distant

pastures.

The Lieme or Lückhausen meadowland (Wisich, = Wiese) was also available for the Lieme farmers and the Büllinghausen estate farms [*Meierei*]. The Lückhausen farmers used it for feeding out hogs; they also pastured their cattle on the 22.1 hectare Lückhausen moor and on the Venn moor; and Obermeyer also pastured on Hardissen moorland.

The many and varied entitlements repeatedly led to disputes and legal cases. Bökhaus had reached a legal settlement over the Lage moor, in 1587, with those on the outskirts of Lage, the settlement calling for placement of some survey marker stones to show the boundary line. Supposedly, a lengthy fight had preceded the settlement. After another legal settlement in 1633, a 100-year dispute-free period ensued, until 1734 when the interim landlord on the Bökhaus farm, Otto Friedrich Übbentrup, took legal action to assert the farm’s half-forgotten pasture rights on the Lage and Hardissen moors. In doing this, he made a lasting contribution to the farm, because in the course of dividing the common property nearly 100 years later, Bökhaus also got a fixed share of that land.¹¹⁷ In 1843, disputes again occurred because Bökhaus, in order to get as much loam as it needed, had disregarded the trenches and the dikes on the Maßbruch that had been set out by order of the Lage magistrate. And once again, the matter was settled in court.¹¹⁸ In Early Modern Times, there was no such thing as an internal ‘community’ regulation of strife. And, besides, the common pasture lands were not property of those who held entitlements to use them; rather, they belonged to the sovereign. By way of acknowledging his supreme right over the lands, those with entitlements had to pay the sovereign yearly small use fees.¹¹⁹

In 1776, this locality had a total of 62 horses and



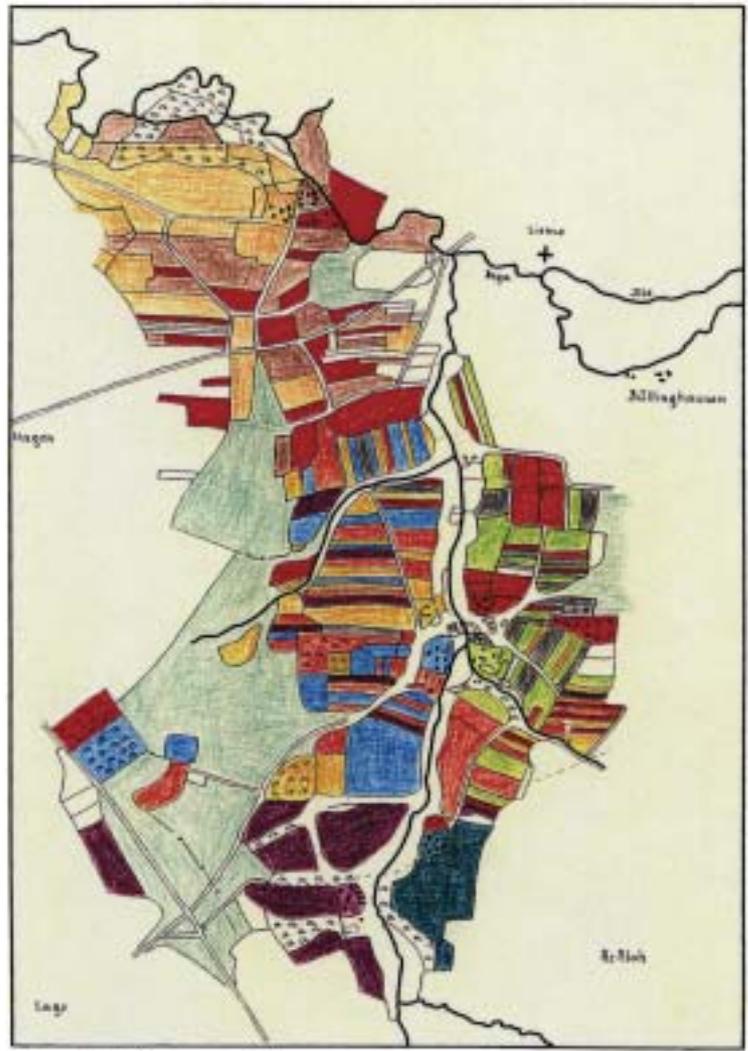
Fig. 15 Map of the 'Lückser and Hardissen Bauerschaft' drawn by land surveyor, Friemel, about 1731. The original has color designations for the Hardissen, Bökhaus, and Lukebart areas, as well as the common lands. The numbered field plots are noted in the land survey register that accompanies the map (cf., the redrawn map in Color plate 1.).

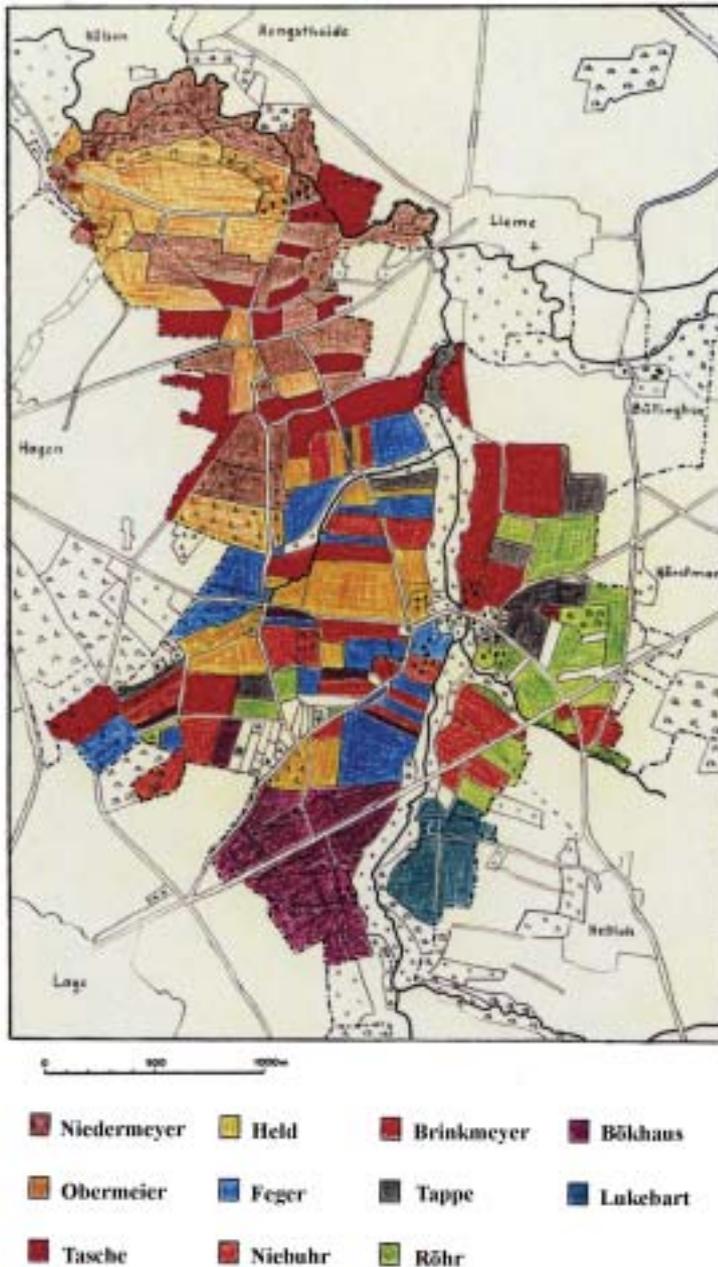
16 foals, 177 head of cattle, and 81 pigs, with only eight goats, know as 'the small man's cow', in this wealthy farming community.¹²⁰ A significant number of sheep had been raised in Hardissen ever since sheep-

raising had started about 1400, as we can tell from the previously mentioned *Schadenregister* and the Everstein Feud. In 1662, the Niedermeyer, Obermeier, Feger, Niebuhr, and Röhr farms each had its own

Colorpl. 1 Property subdivision c. 1731 (original drawing: W. Pfaff)

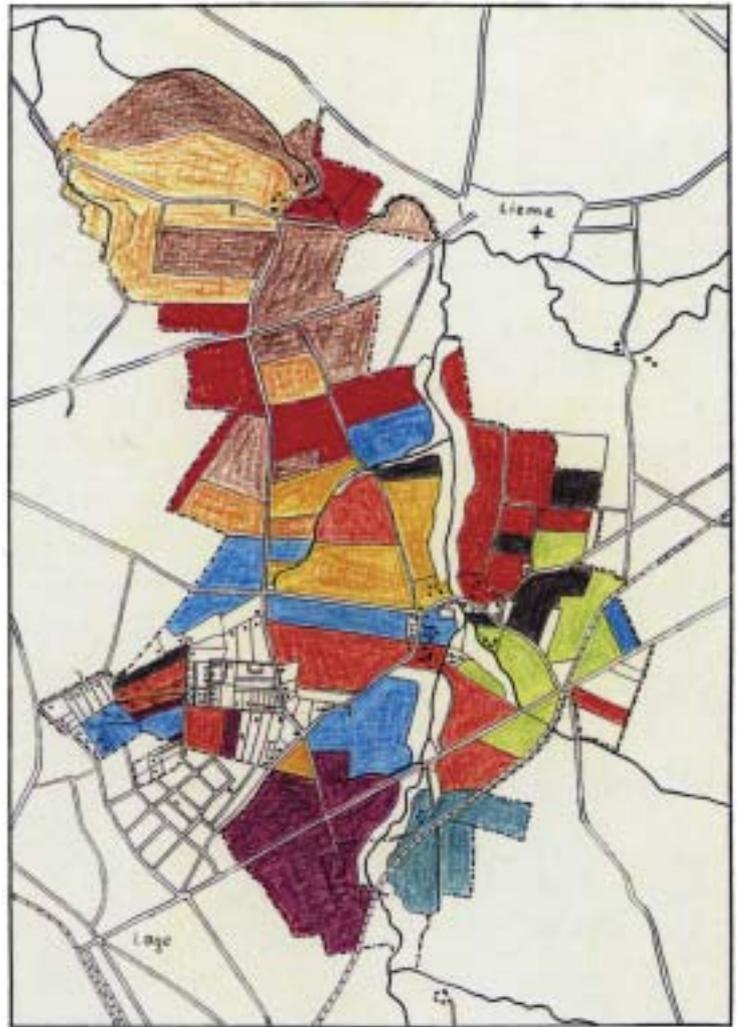
The fields of the Hardissen farmers are characterized by *Gemengelage* (mixture of cropland). West of the Oetternbach lies the croplands of three farms, Held, Feger, and Niebuhr; as well as some Bökhaus farmland strips; East, those of the Brinkmeyer, Tappe, and Röhr farms. As for the shapes of the fields, west of the Oetternbach are found primarily little strips, but also a few blocks. That is, we can designate Hardissen as a *Weiler* (hamlet) with little strips and blocks of fields (often some distance from the farmstead itself). In Lückhausen, we find more block-type field parcels belonging to the three farms, and this locality, too, can be described as a hamlet. The individual Bökhaus and Lukebart farms are not, as they are situated in the midst of their respective farm fields. The common pasture areas of the Lückhausen and Hardissen moors lie at the western edge. The hamlet of Hardissen may have been part of the older settlement period; about that time, Lückhausen also arose. The farms (not in a hamlet) are actually more recent, and started up about the same time as the neighboring Hagenhufensettlement of Heßloh.





Colorpl. 2 Allocated property as shown in the original land register of 1883 (Original drawing: W. Pfaff).

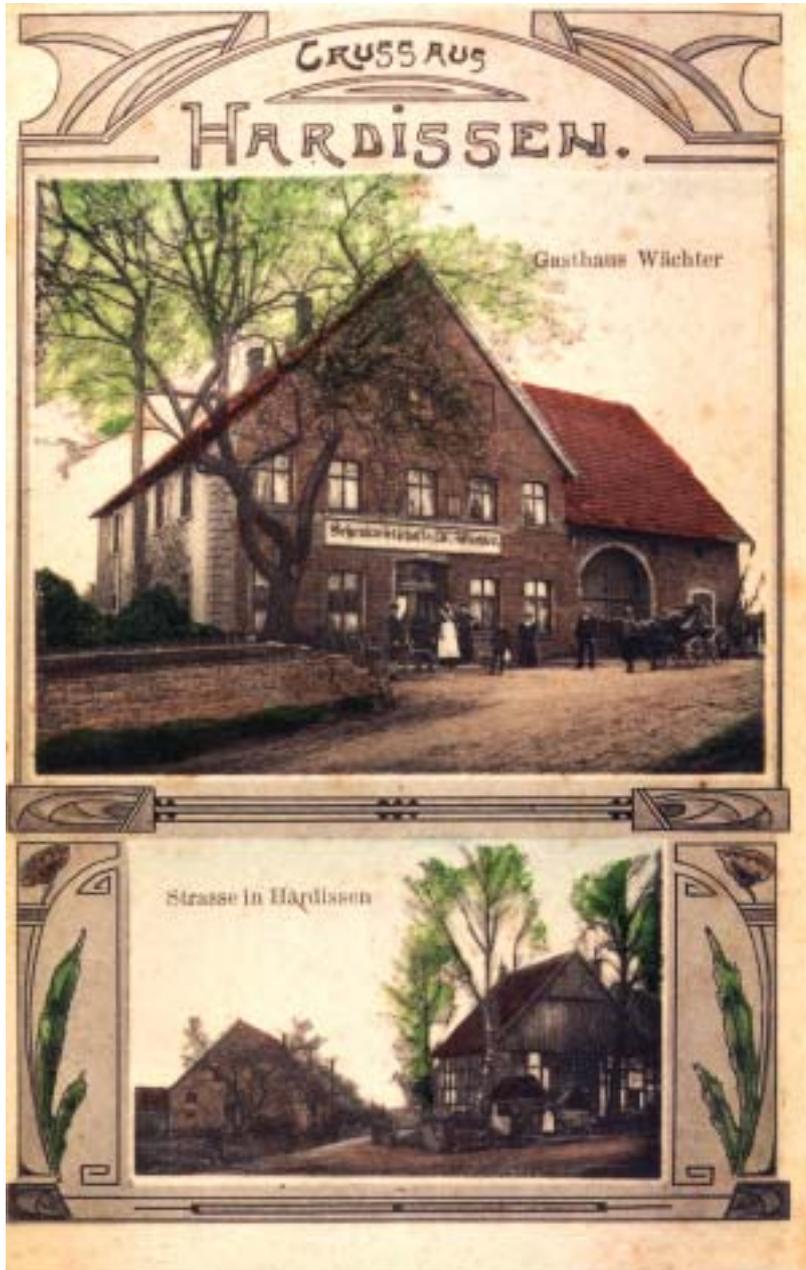
The map shows that both of the most important common areas held by entitlements were divided up among those who had held entitlements to them. In the land strips on both sides of the Oeternbach, there are noticeable changes that resulted from the farmers' initiative. This private rounding out of the estate lands resulted in a change in fields' appearances, with no more land strips, and the equivalent land strip having squared up irregular blocks of land. A striking change is evident in the Held, Brinkmeyer, and Röhr croplands. Housing development activity had already gotten underway on the Hardissen Moor.



0 500 1000



*Colorpl. 3 1960 property allocations (Original drawing: W. Pfaff).
Filling out big blocks of land has continued, to a large extent. For the 'little people', Hardissen moorland has become the most popular place to build and live.*



Colorpl. 4 The oldest Hardissen Gasthaus, Wächter, and a view toward the town's entrance formed the motifs for this color postcard. The old village fountain can be seen in front of the Fischer timbered house, torn down in 1997.

shepherd.¹²¹ Such intense focus on sheep raising meant that arguments over pasture land were not over.¹²² About the middle of the 18th century, Röhr, Held, and Niebuhr were each allowed to herd 50 sheep, and Feger, 100 sheep, on the common grazing land. Upon petition by Brinkmeyer, the sheep pastured there were officially counted; it turned out that Held had 85 sheep grazing there, and had to pay a fine of one Gulden.¹²³ Niedermeier and Obermeier of Lückhausen had pasture rights for herds of 150 and 100 sheep, respectively.¹²⁴ In 1776, the total number of sheep counted in the Hardissen *Bauerschaft* was 860, though some of these sheep really belonged to the shepherds themselves. Not just the large farms, but also the Grünemann pensioner Farm No. 13, raised a respectable number of sheep, 150.¹²⁵

In the 17th century, wolves indigenous to Lippe posed a danger for sheep and other animals. Responding to an advertisement by Held's wife, Frische in Trophagen started out from Lemgo, taking along a

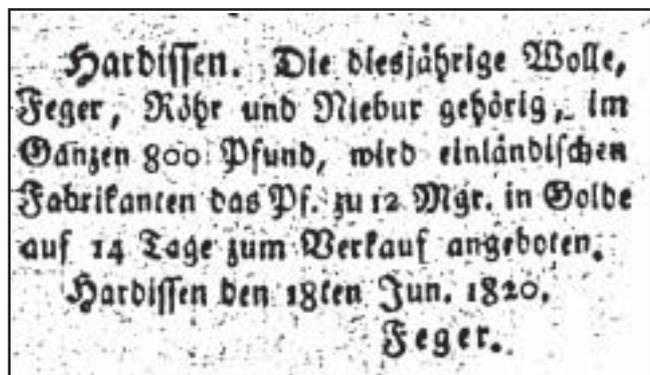


Fig. 17 The wool the shepherds obtained was offered for sale in 1820 in the Lippe paper, 'Intelligenzblatt'.

beef animal for her; Frische got irritated and turned the animal loose, and it 'was that very night eaten by the wolf on the Büllinghausen moor.'¹²⁶ This is yet another reason why the desolate moorlands are viewed as eerie.

Agriculture started undergoing major changes around 1800. The old three-field system was altered, in that fallow (uncultivated) time was shortened and was used for growing forage plants. This enabled the barn-feeding of livestock, and that style of feeding gradually replaced the pasturing system. The common land could now be divided up and receive more cultivation, entirely under private control. Cultivation of the Hardissen land expanses, which had long ago begun with the first clearing of forests, was now largely complete. The farmers had a greater or a lesser share of the estate lands, in accordance with the rights they had held up to that time.

Subdividing Hardissen moorland had been initiated by several of the Hardissen *Kolone* on August 5, 1817. However, the process of division was off to a slow start: Feger and Niebuhr did not approve of it at first, because they feared that the subdivided land would require more roads to be laid and then maintained, and that would be costly. Then, too, Feger had a lot of smaller points of contention he wanted cleared up, among them the extent of his sheep pasture entitlement. Feger explained in 1821: 'I'm not obstructing the subdivision'; I only want 'what is rightly mine.'

In March of 1823, the Lippe government put Merckel, the estate owner in Braunenbruch, in charge of dividing the moorland. The area was surveyed that fall and subsequently turned over to each farm commensurate with its previous entitlement. On February 17, 1824, the government put its stamp of approval on the completed subdivision of Hardissen moorland. In the

Fig. 18 The 1817 document by which eleven Hardissen Colone (tenant farmers) initiated the privatization of Hardissen moorland. They requested the Detmold Amt to 'assist' them as they divided up the moorland amongst themselves. Those signing were: Bökhauß, Luckebart, Brinckmeier, Grünemann, Tappe, Wächter, Brüggemann, Brinkmann, Sepmann, Held, and Röhr. At the bottom in different handwriting appears 'Farmers Feger a[nd] Niebuhr; also parties with an interest in the land in question, oppose the division.'

02

Wir Untertanen des Amtes
 und Gutsbesitzer des
 Leinwandguts Hardissen
 haben uns einstimmig
 vereinbart das unter
 dem Namen des Amtes
 bestehende Gut Hardissen
 unter uns zu vertheilen.
 Wir ersuchen
 das Wohlwollende Amt
 Hardissen um die
 Ausführung dieser
 Absicht mit Rücksicht
 auf die Wohlthaten
 der Gutsbesitzer
 zu verordnen zu lassen
 den 5ten August 1817

Bökhauß Luckebart. Grünemann
 Sepmann. Tappe
 Brüggemann. Brinkmann
 Held

F. Feger
 Niebuhr

P. H. G. ...
 ...

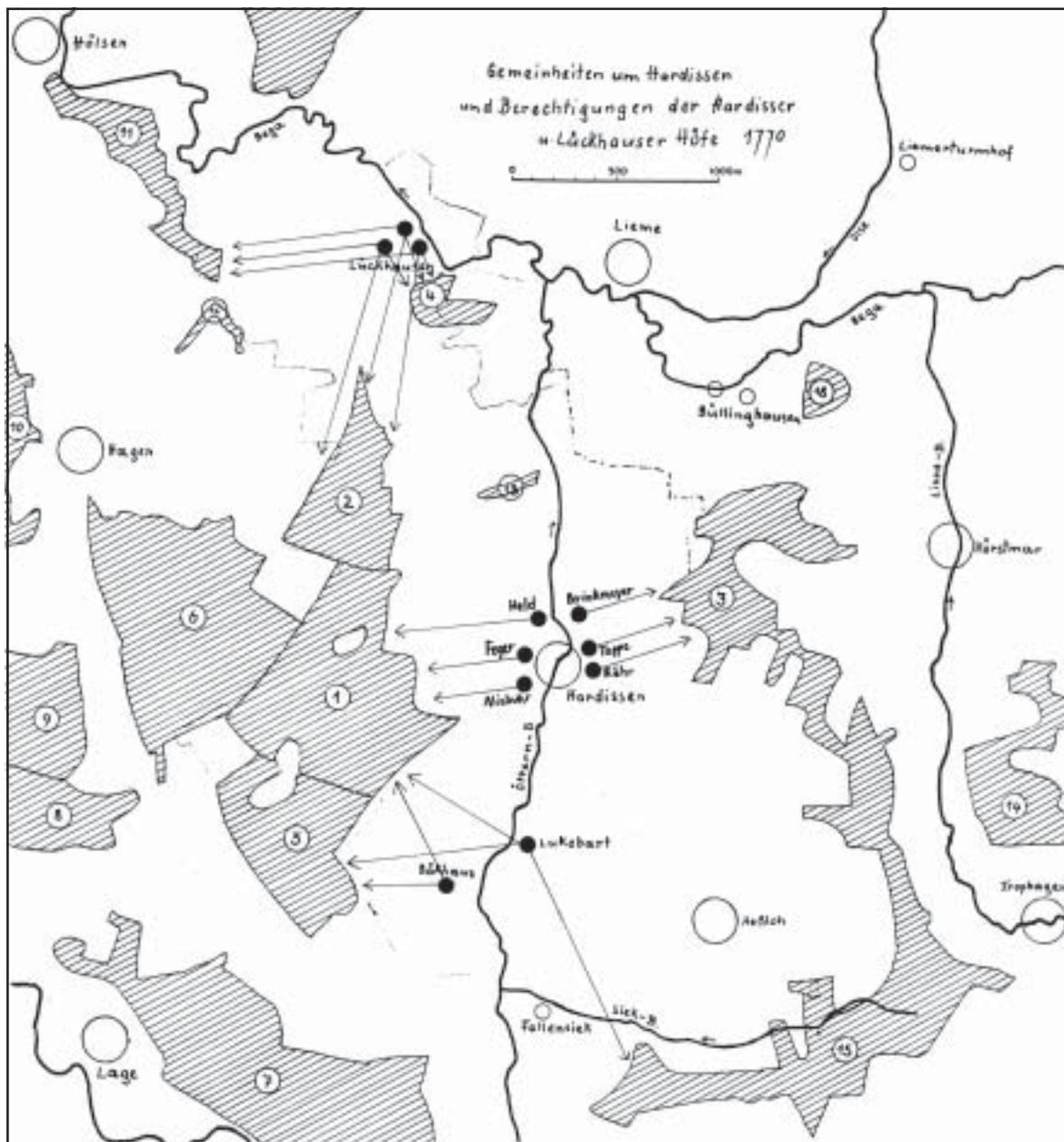


Fig. 19 (see map) Common land in and around Hardissen, and Hardissen and Lückhausen farms entitlements, 1770 (original drawing: W. Pfaff). The map shows the common land areas that were not divided among those holding entitlements to pasture land until the middle of the 19th century. These common land expanses can be viewed as relics of the once considerable woodlands that existed between the two separate settlement areas. These open areas allow us to imagine the clearing efforts put forth by the Hardissen and Lückhausen farms, and by the Bökhaus and Lukebart farms. In clearing, they worked their way from inside the forest outward. The farm name “Röhr” (Roder = person who clears) hearkens back to that undertaking. [note: number key to the map follows for the following entries:]

1. Hardisser Heide
2. Lückhauser Heide
3. Büllinghauser Heide
4. Lück[hau]ser Wisch
5. Lager Maßbruch
6. Hager Maßbruch
7. Lagische Heide
8. Lager Berg
9. Hager Berg
10. Wellenheide
11. Vennheide/Hölser Heide
12. Hölser Mesch und Vennheide
13. Holz-Siek
14. Trophager Heide
15. Heidensche und Hefloher Heide
18. Büllinghauser Heide

ensuing years, a road was laid out across the allocated common ground. In 1845/46 the six concerned parties, Röhr, Brinkmeyer, Tappe, Brüggemann, Grünemann, and Wächter, had several meetings at the farm of Chairman Röhr and agreed on how to divide the (remaining) common land plots inside and outside Hardissen.¹²⁷

Dividing up the Lückhausen moor was first considered in 1830 but was delayed for some reason and not finalized until 1851/52. The remaining expanses to which the Lückhausen farms had entitlements extended beyond the *Bauerschaft* borders, so small parcels in the neighboring communities were awarded as compensation. From the division of common land planned since 1824, for example, tenant farmer Täsche retained fields amounting to 4.1 hectares from

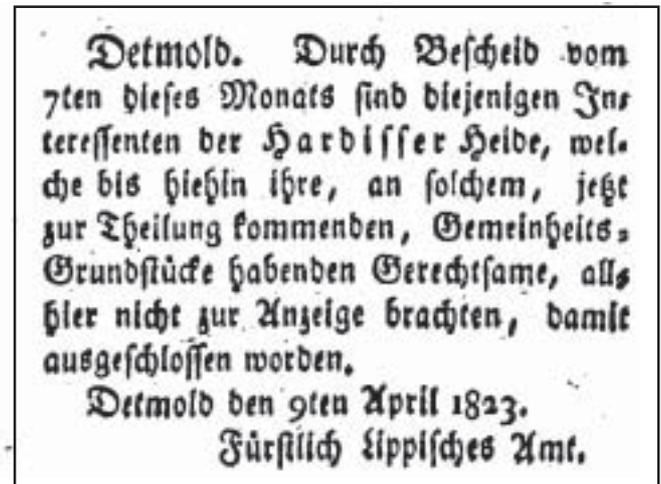


Fig. 20 The advertisement for the upcoming division of Hardissen moorland, as it appeared in the April 12, 1823 edition of the Lippe paper, *Intelligenzblatt*.

Lieme, Hardissen, and Hölsen; Niebuhr got about 14 hectares of Hardissen moorland, Heide moorland, Lieme Wisch (meadowland), and Venn moorland between Lückhausen and Hölsen.¹²⁸

One of the pillars of the manorial system came down with the disappearance of the common pastureland. In 1808, another of its pillars was eradicated when Princess Pauline, influenced by the Napoleonic reforms, abolished serfdom and estate property. The lord-serf/tenant manorial relationship ended, and fixed annuities replaced the variable-amount taxes (inheritance tax, tax for buying oneself free from serfdom, and *Weinkauf*). Of course, many Hardissen inhabitants had been personally free (i.e., serfs, but not bound to the land) and now the number of free farmers went higher still.

A 1791 document, still in the possession of the Feger farm, states that the regent, Count Ludwig Henrich Adolph of Lippe, confirms the ‘abolition of bound serf and property status for *Vollmeyer* Johann Herm Christoph Feger’ and his entire family. For this, Feger had to pay 70 Gulden and a *Kanon* (yearly fixed sum). And with an eye to the future, it was agreed that Feger, in the event any future rescinding of serfdom from estates of the same size and yield increased or lowered the *Kanon*, intended to keep his the same. He also warned them not to raise the *Kanon* or he would ask for the 70 Gulden back and ‘take himself and his family back into serfdom’ ... Feger had, in 1831, also bought himself out from under the grain lease tax, long before later royal decrees ended all such taxes and services.

Fig. 21 [see map] Hardissen moorland allocated among the 13 parties who held entitlements to it. Map by P.A. Merckel, 1823/24.

The dismantling of the old manorial system was now complete. All tax or services obligations were converted to yearly payments and could be ‘wiped out’ forever by paying 25 times the yearly payment amount. For example, between 1839 and 1860, Niedermeyer of Lückhausen wiped his yearly fixed sum off the books, and, between 1853 and 1886, Held did the same. In 1857, Hardissen inhabitants as a group erased the once hated *Zehnte*. As in olden days, the Lord of Kerßenbrock on Mönchhof in Barntrup was the one entitled to it; he demanded a total of 4500 Reichstaler from farm Nos. 2-6; 9; and 11. In 1889, Bökhaus cleared his remaining yearly payment from the books. The last recorded instance of the *Bauerschaft* erasing yearly payments dates back to 1919.¹²⁹ A grain tax the Brinkmeyer farm was obliged to pay to the Heiden church was not erased until the 1950s, for an agreed upon sum.¹³⁰

All in all, it can be said of the Hardissen *Bauerschaft* that its farms, with their rich, fertile soils, headed into modern times in good shape. One index of that is that all farming operations ‘survived’, and none went bankrupt and had to be divided up. Another indicator is immigration. Unlike inhabitants in much poorer regions in Lippe, the inhabitants of Hardissen stayed put in their homeland, and apparently were able to ‘make a decent living.’

From only the 1880s are there records of several emigrants, but they certainly did not emigrate due to poor economic conditions. In 1881, Gustav Niebuhr from No. 6 (1863-1913) went to America and became a highly respected pastor there, and his son made a name for himself as a political philosopher and as a presidential advisor. What we know from word of mouth indicates this emigrant left because of the strict routine imposed by Gustav’s father. Louis, Gustav’s

CONTRIBUTIONS		auf		von	
<p>Quittungs-Buch</p> <p>für <i>Niedermeier</i></p> <p>Num. 1 der Bauerschaft <i>Feger</i></p> <p>Booley <i>Gründe</i></p> <p>Amte <i>Lügge</i></p> <p>Gibt in Simpio oder zum einfachen Monat 9 rthlr. 20 mgr. 3 pf</p> <p>Letzt am 19. Juli 1843 <i>Pauline</i></p>					
<p><i>Messgaben pro 18 HH Simpio</i></p>					
<p><i>für den Monat</i></p>					
<i>Januar 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>Februar 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>März 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>April 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>Mai 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>Juni 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>Juli 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>August 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>September 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>Oktober 18</i>					
<i>November 18 bezahlt</i>	9	20	3		
<i>December</i>					
<p><i>Summe</i></p>					

Fig. 22 The receipt book compiled in 1843 records Colon (tenant farmer) Niedermeyer's payment of his property tax. Fig. 21a The document wiping out an 1813 grain tax [in kind] still has a place of honor in the Feger farm today. It bears the signature of Princess Pauline.

younger brother, followed three years later. About the same time, three brothers from the Brinkmeyer No. 9 farm left home and homeland, bound for America: Gustav and Julius stayed there, while Gottlieb, the oldest brother, later returned to Lippe.¹³¹

Sometime between 1820 and 1870, German agriculture began to flourish like never before. Since agriculture depended on lots of permanent and seasonal workers, it afforded salaries and board for many folks with no land, and for the *Einlieger* – although, not for all of them by any means. The relentless rise in population kept adding to the number of those having no property, for which agriculture could no longer offer a sufficient ‘living’, and this had a lot to do with the village structure still being determined by the principle of inheritance right and the farms having to remain intact. The land made available through dividing up the common ground was relatively poor, and the main winners in the agriculture reform period, those who owned the large farms, kept that land for their own use. As has been shown, only very gradually was the land offered for sale to folks from Hardissen and nearby areas who wanted to have homes of their own.

What did the ‘little people’ do to make a living? Flax cultivation and the textile industry were traditionally significant endeavors in all of the eastern part of Westphalia. “Rotten” (soaking of flax to remove its fiber) took place on the moor, near the corner of what is today Sprickerweg and Lückhauser streets,¹³² where it was spun into yarn or woven into linen. The peak period that witnessed this means of making a living occurred in the 18th century. In the end, the system that involved cottage-based weavers and spinners who did work for non-local “Verleger” (transporters) could not compete with British mechanized textile operations, so

the spinning wheels and looms were then operated mainly for use locally.

One possible way out would have been that which an industrial revolution would offer, as was the case in many German regions from about 1845/50, and that would have changed folks’ quality of life immensely. However, what happened in Lippe was that brick-making by itinerate labor came in as a replacement for textile manufacturing, and this was half industrialized and half done by manual labor of folks with small holdings.¹³³ Since the brickmakers usually did agricultural work, too, their wives had to take on the agricultural work when the husbands were away on brick-making jobs. Whereas the look of many villages in Lippe was changed by all the ‘cottages of the brickmakers’, in Hardissen this really only happened on the Hardissen moor which had been increasing in population since the 1880s. Hardissen, rooted as it was in agriculture, did not have a significant itinerate work tradition, but it did go back a ways. As far back as the late 1700s, three young men from the small holding, Wächter No. 14 and Brinkman No. 16 went to work in Holland, Friesland, or somewhere outside Lippe territories.¹³⁴

In 1900, 198 of Hardissen’s male inhabitants were employed as brickmakers, and two of them as master masons/brickmakers. This 13% [of the workforce] was one of the smallest percentages among the villages within the *Kirchspiel* (parish) of Heiden, where Pivitsheide VH led by far with 38%, but only a few brickmakers lived in the small towns where the large farmers ran their operations, such as in Heßloh and the villages of Hagen, Oettern-Bremke, and Niewald.¹³⁵

The first sign of Lippe’s coming industrialization was the building of a railroad. By the end of 1880, the rail line from Herford to Detmold had opened. Plans had been underway since 1880 for a connecting rail

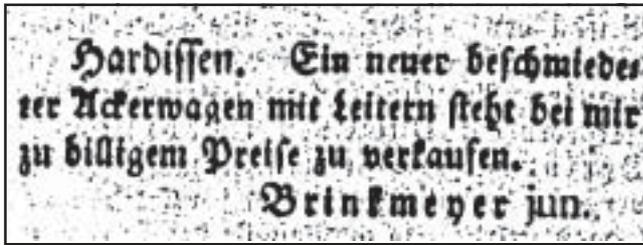


Fig. 23 An early classified ad [placed by Brinkmeyer jun.= the younger], in the 1841 [Lippe] “Intelligenzblättern”: Hardissen. On my place, I have for sale for a low price, a newly forged farm wagon with ladders.’

line from Lage to Hameln via Lemgo, and construction began in October of 1894. The rail line ran through Heßloh, Hardissen, and Hörstmar, and this meant the landowners in those areas had to relinquish land for that. On July 8, 1896, a train made its first run from Lage to Lemgo.¹³⁶

The sugar [beet syrup] factory, founded by a few enterprising farmers in 1883 as an *Aktiengesellschaft* (abbr, AG; joint stock company), also profited from the railroad connection, and it was no coincidence the factory was located in Lage, on the Herford to Detmold rail line. It also contributed money for construction of the portion of the rail line that ran to Hameln.¹³⁷ Founding members, that is, owners of the first 2500 bushels (just under 430 hectares) worth of sugar beet syrup shares, were, from Hardissen, the farm owners, Brinkmeyer, Grünemann, Lukebart, and Röhr. From 1924-1929, Wilhelm Obermeier from Lückhausen, was a member of the factory’s board of directors, and from 1925-1949, a member of the board’s executive committee.¹³⁸ The nearby sugar factory was and still is extremely important to Hardissen. In 1963, it merged



Fig. 23a The Hardissen gatekeeper, Herrmann c. 1960.

with the company, “Lippe-Weser Zucker AG”. Since economic advances mainly had a positive effect on the efficiency of agriculture, it had become the first truly modern ‘industry’ in the locality. This is reflected in the well-respected positions many of the farmers held in



Fig. 24 Wilhelm Brinkmeyer (1873-1957), founding member of the LHG [=Lippische Hauptgenossenschaft; main cooperative].

their honorary or volunteer endeavors. That also held true for other institutions: In 1911, Wilhelm Brinkmeyer co-founded the Lage-based *Lippische Hauptgenossenschaft* (Lippe main cooperative), and he sat on its board until 1933. Friedrich Feger served on its executive board from 1933-1946.¹³⁹ Karl Bökhaus was also known for holding numerous volunteer offices.

In 1901, out of 40 Hardissen farm owners, 15 considered themselves “Landwirte” (farmers) (Nos. 1-13; No. 8; No. 20). Out of the remaining men living on

Karl Brinkmann, Hardissen bei Lage

Schuhwaren-
Mass- und  Reparatur-
Werkstatt

Fol. _____ Hardissen, den 21. 11. 1907 1007

Rechnung für *Herrn Tischlermeister Berkemeier*
Hardissen

5. 11.	für Herrn Lehmann Schuhe	5 00
9. 11.	" " " "	3 60
13. 11.	" Herrich Schuhe genäh.	1 30
24. 11.	" Herrmann Schuhe	3 70
25. 11.	" Schuster Herrich " "	2 30
		15 20
	Konting. anfallen 21. 11. 07	
	Karl Brinkmann	<i>[Signature]</i>

Fig. 25 [receipt for shoe repairs at Karl Brinkmann's shoe repair shop].

farms, seven worked as “Tagelöhner” (day-laborers), four farmhands had their own households. Almost all the rest of the fathers of these families were brickmakers, namely 35, and among them were the master brickmakers at Hagenböhmer No. 24, Schürmann No. 32, and Kramer No. 40.

Fig. 26 Invoice from the carpenter Berkemeier for the Bergmann house construction in 1950.

Fr. Berkemeier

Tischler-, Zimmer-
und Stellmacher

Hardissen bei Lage *Kliffen*

Hardissen, den 15. Febr.

1050

Rechnung für Zimmerarbeiten Fol.

für dem *Vierstünger* dem *Büchzimmer*, fiesf. *Stück III*

2. Ab. 2. Ab.

	Uebertrag von Stück II		338	32
	24 Stühle gefertigt für sich für Holzstoffhaltung von 2 Stühle mit einem Stuhl = 4,00 gms.		11	15
	24 Stühle gefertigt mit Sägenläufern 4,00 gms.	4,00	22	08
	24 Stühle gefertigt aus Hirschhornholz für einen Stuhl für 1,00 gms. Anteil		2	94
	24 Stühle gefertigt mit Sägenläufern 4,00 gms.	4,00	5	56
	24 Stühle gefertigt aus Holz mit einem Stuhl 2,68 gms			
	Stuhl mit einem Stuhl 1,20 =			
	24 Stühle gefertigt mit Hirschhornholz 6,16 =			
	9,97 gms Anteil mit Hirschhornholz		14	96
	Lieferung der Bretter 4 gms. 10,96 x 24 =	1,50	16	14
	24 Stühle gefertigt aus Holz mit einem Stuhl 4,00 gms			
	Stuhl mit einem Stuhl 4,00 gms			
	Hirschhornholz 2,38 =			
	9,80 gms Anteil mit Hirschhornholz 1,50		14	70
	Lieferung der Bretter 4 gms. 10,96 x 24 =	1,50	16	14
	24 Stühle gefertigt aus Holz mit einem Stuhl 4,00 gms	0,95	14	10
	<i>Wägen</i>		449	15
			451	18

Four Hardissen residents were brickmakers or master brickmakers, and there was one carpenter and one miller; and rounding out the group were the innkeeper at Wächter No. 33 and the school teacher. Nearly 50 years later, most of the farms were still in business:¹⁴⁰

Farm	Size (in hectares)
Bam No. 10	25.46
Bökhaus No. 2	63.20
Brinkmeyer No. 9	44.90
Feger No. 5	66.31
Fischer No. 13	05.11
Held No. 4	44.25
Kempkes No. 3	35.50
Niebuhr No. 6	54.32
Obermeier No. 7	73.72
Reese No. 1	92.82
Tappe No. 11	22.72
Tasche No. 8	48.19

Cleaning up the way the cropland was arranged helped to modernize agriculture around Hardissen, since the complicated old small-parcel structure was done away with, and in its place, larger, contiguous areas were created that were easier to work with machines. Even before the official process began, many land plots had been voluntarily traded [to even up the fields], from the 19th century into the 1940s.¹⁴¹ To complete the process, Hardissen entered into an agreement and linked up with Hörstmar in 1953, and the Lückhausen farmers profited from the transfer processes in Lieme between 1953 and 1964.¹⁴²

In 1960, the village and surrounding area, in fact, had 19 agricultural and timber/forestry operations, constituting a total area of 613 hectares, or, spanning

half of the entire *Gemarkung* (district).¹⁴³ Although the operations were modernized around this time, they were still not fully mechanized: horses were still being used on a daily basis on the farms. As a side note, one of them, Feger's black mare, Monika, died in an unusual way: At the 1959 'shooting competition' ["Schützenfest"], while she was hitched to a carriage, she suffered a heart attack during the parade through Lage, fell to the ground, and soon died. Apparently, the unaccustomed work in the midst of loud marching-band music was too much excitement for the 20-year-old animal.¹⁴⁴ Today, the use of animals for economic gain has almost totally disappeared, and only in Lückhausen do you still find extensive hog fattening operations. Here, all three farms are full-time agricultural businesses, and in Hardissen two farms still engage purely in crop farming, one a full-time operation, the other a sideline one. Here as well declining agricultural prices led to a decrease in the number of farms and earnings from agricultural endeavors.

Trade or industry developed to only a limited degree in Hardissen. According to a 1961 census, out of a Hardissen-based workforce of 379 folks, almost a third (121) were employed in agricultural or timbering/forestry operations, and almost all the rest had to commute outside the area, because there were only jobs for 19 people in the nine establishments in town that offered employment.¹⁴⁵ Today, given that even the farms no longer offer jobs, the tendency to commute is on the increase. Presently, these are the Hardissen businesses: the Gärtnerei Brink; Geschäft Helle; Werkzeug-Formenbau Brüggemann; Bauschlosserei Mieß, and Siekmann Tischlerei.

The pub business also has a rich, rural tradition. About 1900, Friedrich Wächter (1848-1920) founded an inn and bakery in the middle of town, and it had

Fig. 27 Workaday world on the Niebuhr farm, c. 1900.



the farmstead house number, 33. The building that stood near the main highway (“Kuhstraße”- ‘cow path’) was torn down after it was in a fire and then rebuilt further up because the owner was not happy about the poor condition of the Hardissen highway. And he also then had to petition for a new license, and that was not easy because many farmers preferred it if their workers did not have the opportunity for diversion in the village. Also well known were the brickmaker festivities, at which occasions either a tent was put up, or a small structure from which schnapps was served

to folks right from the window.¹⁴⁶ After the owner died, his son, also Friedrich Wächter (1880-1957), took over, and after him, his daughter, Mrs. Henny Rieke, who later sold the pub to Erich Meier.

On the outskirts of town was the “Heidekrug” (pub), which was started in 1949 by Ernst Heuer and until recently was run by the Bruno Heuer family. Later, Edward Berg ran an inn-keeping operation at the newer residence area at the athletic field. At first it was a sideline business, and then became an establishment called “bei Columbus”.



Fig. 27a Horse team on the Reese farm.

Fig. 27b Warm-blood and cold-blood horses on the Reese farm.



Fig. 27c Two magnificent draught horses are proudly shown on the Reese farm.



Fig. 28 Sowing and harrowing on a Brinkmeyer farm field in the early 1950s.

Fig. 29 Preparation of the potato acreage on a Brinkmeyer farm field in the early 1950s.



Fig. 29a Harvesting grain purely by hand on a Reese farm field.

Fig. 30 Harvesting grain on Brinkmeyer farmland on the moor near the present-day athletic field, before the war.



Fig. 31 Bringing the harvest crown, on Bökhaus's property, c. 1920.





Fig. 32 Einfuhr (bringing in) of the dried wheat sheaves on the Fischer farm, 1959.



Fig. 33 Technological beginnings: an early reaper/binder machine on a Niebuhr farm field.



Fig. 34 Technical progress continues: Karl Bökhaus mowing his grain with a tractor with iron wheels.



Fig. 35 Alwin Niebuhr doesn't want to be barred from progress either.



Fig. 36 Harvest wagon on the Tasche farm.

Fig. 37 The harvest crew on the Fischer farm in the 1930s.



Fig. 38 The Helferschar (throng of helpers) at the Feger farm was still quite imposing in 1955.



Fig. 39 The last loaded harvest wagon on the Brinkmeyer farm, c. 1950.

Fig. 40 The last harvest festival at the Brinkmeyer place, mid-1950s.





Fig. 41 The Brinkmeyer farm's permanent employees, around 1948.



Fig. 42 Employees at the Reese farm.



*Colorpl. 5 Formerly the Held farm,
now Seelig farm.*

Colorpl. 6 The Feger farm.





Colorpl. 7 The Niebuhr farm.

Colorpl. 8 The Brinkmeyer farm.



Colorpl. 9 The Kempkes farm, formerly the Röhr farm.



Colorpl. 10 The Reese farm, formerly the Niedermeyer farm, in Lückhausen.

Colorpl. 11 The Obermeier farm in Lückhausen.



Colorpl. 12 The Oberkrome-Tasche farm in Lückhausen.

Fig. 42a Employees at the Reese farm.



Fig. 43 The draught horses gradually quit being used (c. 1955) at the Reese farm.



Fig. 44 Harvest festival on the Lukebart farm, 1956.

Fig. 45 Bringing in the harvested wheat on the Fischer farm, 1959.





Fig. 46 A horse with lighter duty on the Reese farm in the 1950s.

Fig. 47 Fischer farm's milk wagon, around 1930.





Figs. 48-49 Horses hitched to wagons carrying milk for sale, Niebuhr farm around 1910/20.





*Figs. 50-51 On the Brinkmeyer farm
in the early 1960s.*



Fig. 52 An impressive breeding bull on the Tasche farm.



Fig. 53a In the Reese farm's milking parlor.



Fig. 53 The Bökhaus farm's dairy herd.



Fig. 54 A shepherd taking his flock to pasture in the 1960s; the Brinkmeyer farm is in the background.



Fig. 55 On the Bam farm, 1931.



Fig. 56 Heinrich Röhr (2nd from the right) evaluating the soil in the 1920s.



Fig. 57 Frau Brink feeding the poultry on the Röhr farm, c. 1970.



Fig. 58 Henriette Niebuhr with her dogs in the 1930s.

Fig. 59 A Postcard from 1916 shows Wächter's business, bakery, and Kolonialwarenhandlung (household goods business).



Fig. 60 In front of Wächter's business, c. 1940.



Fig. 62 The “Heidekrug” pub in the 1950s.

Fig. 63 The Berg restaurant, today the establishment, “Bei Columbus”, 1997.





Fig. 64 Geschäft Helle (a shop) on the corner of Lückhauser Straße and Hudeweg. Earlier, the Hardisen post office was also located here.

V. The Oetternbach and the Bega, and ‘Hardissen Moor’, National Trust Reserve (by Wilhelm Brinkmeyer)

The Hardissen and Lückhausen settlements evidently started on the Bega stream banks, with settlement along the Oetternbach stream coming later. What makes this an extremely likely assumption is that all farms are situated right on the banks of the Bega or the Oetternbach. In prehistoric times, larger rivers and also streams provided the only means of penetrating the ‘primeval forest’.

These waterways were not only a means of getting from one place to another, in many ways they were also vital to the very lives of our ancestors, providing fishing and a place for washing and sun-drying clothing, and later for [drying] flax and other fibrous plants; livestock drinking water; and also animal waste removal. One of the most important uses well into the 20th century was *Flößrechte* (irrigation rights). This ‘irrigation’, a flooding of the meadows and pastures close to the stream, offered one of the few possibilities for nutrient enrichment. Organic fertilizer was expensive and in short supply, and there was no synthesized nitrogen yet. In order to control the flooding, an extensive network of dams and ditches was laid out on the banks of the Oetternbach.

These interventions in the normal stream channel meant that agreements among farmers with adjoining lands were always necessary. We can tell that by looking at several of the 19th-century permit proceedings on file.¹⁴⁷ Road construction that connected Lage and Lemgo required a “Durchstich” (diversion cut) of the Oetternbach in one of Feger’s meadows. Shortly after that, in 1839, Feger asked for permission to put in a *Stauwerk* (weir dam) at that spot. The idea was to

divert stream water into an irrigation ditch under the new road that passed on through Feger’s timberland and ended at the “Bruch” (meadow) that needed irrigating. Neighbor Bökhaus lodged a complaint about the plan, which resulted in experts in such matters being called in to testify. Basically, it was determined that no more than half of the stream’s waterflow would be allowed to be diverted for irrigation purposes. The experts tested a weir that flooded just a portion of the neighboring meadow, which, according to the experts, if anything, would only help Bökhaus, not hurt him. Only a few other points of contention had to be worked out before an amicable agreement was reached in March of 1841.

In a later case, in 1874, placement of a similar weir was planned by farmer Lukebart, but at first could not get approved, as Bökhaus’ objection put a stop to its construction. A few years later, the two neighbors did come to an agreement, and in 1882 they built a structure together. This time, too, the construction was delayed until several negotiations had transpired, as a result of adjacent neighbors, Fellensiek (Heßloh No. 4) and Feger, having raised objections to the weir. Farmer Brinkmeyer encountered, unexpectedly, major obstacles when he wanted to put in a weir in 1880. At first, residents agreed to it with certain stipulations, but when the plan was advertised in the Lippe *Amt*’s newspaper, further objections were raised.

The structure was not completed until 1886, and it had just started working when Farmer Röhr wrote to the *Amt* that Brinkmeyer was using the weir, and these are his exact words, ‘in a way that is unaccept-

Fig. 65 A view of Hardissen Moor in 1990. As the only limestone-base moor of a sizeable expanse in Lippe, it offered space for rare and endangered animal and plant species.



able...¹⁴⁸ to Röhr, and other neighbors. Evidently, Brinkmeyer's neighbors' meadows suffered due to the restricted water flow in the Oetternbach. At any rate, the geometrician agreed that the dam structure had to be moved. How the plan then actually transpired is not entirely clear even today. One thing is worth noting: the irrigation advantages were so attractive that even significant obstacles (and high costs) could not deter those folks instigating the plan from pursuing its implementation.

Records also mention getting permission for a *projectirte(n) Bach-Regulierung* (planned stream regulation).¹⁴⁹ The Oetternbach, which had originally meandered a lot, as can be seen in the map drawn by [surveyor] Friemel, was straightened out considerably during that time. The original and new stream courses appear on the original survey maps of 1879 and 1880.

We cannot know for certain whether the construction of the sugar factory in Lage in 1883 had anything to do with the change in the stream's course. However, we could assume that the farmers hauled back with them to Hardissen "Rueckfracht", i.e, some of the soil that was washed off of the sugar beets at the factory.

Also, there was evidently a small railslide/line running between Lage and Hardissen at this time. That our ancestors did not shy away from undertaking large-scale earth removal, with or without the aid of machines, can be seen regarding the Lage-to-Lemgo railroad line, opened in 1896.

During different phases of its construction, high dams had to be raised; deep channels had to be dug at others.

We will now return to the discussion of the Bega and Oetternbach, noting that many of their original

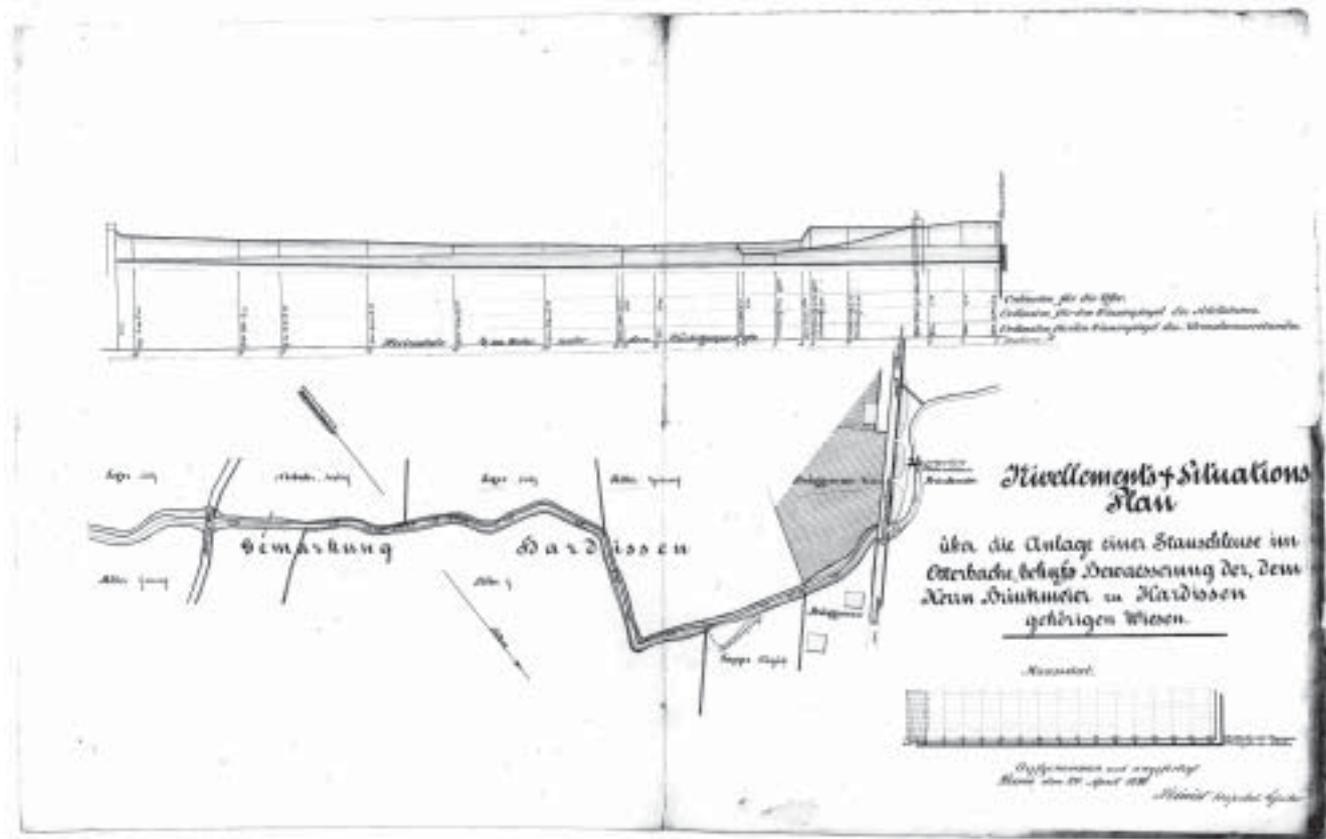
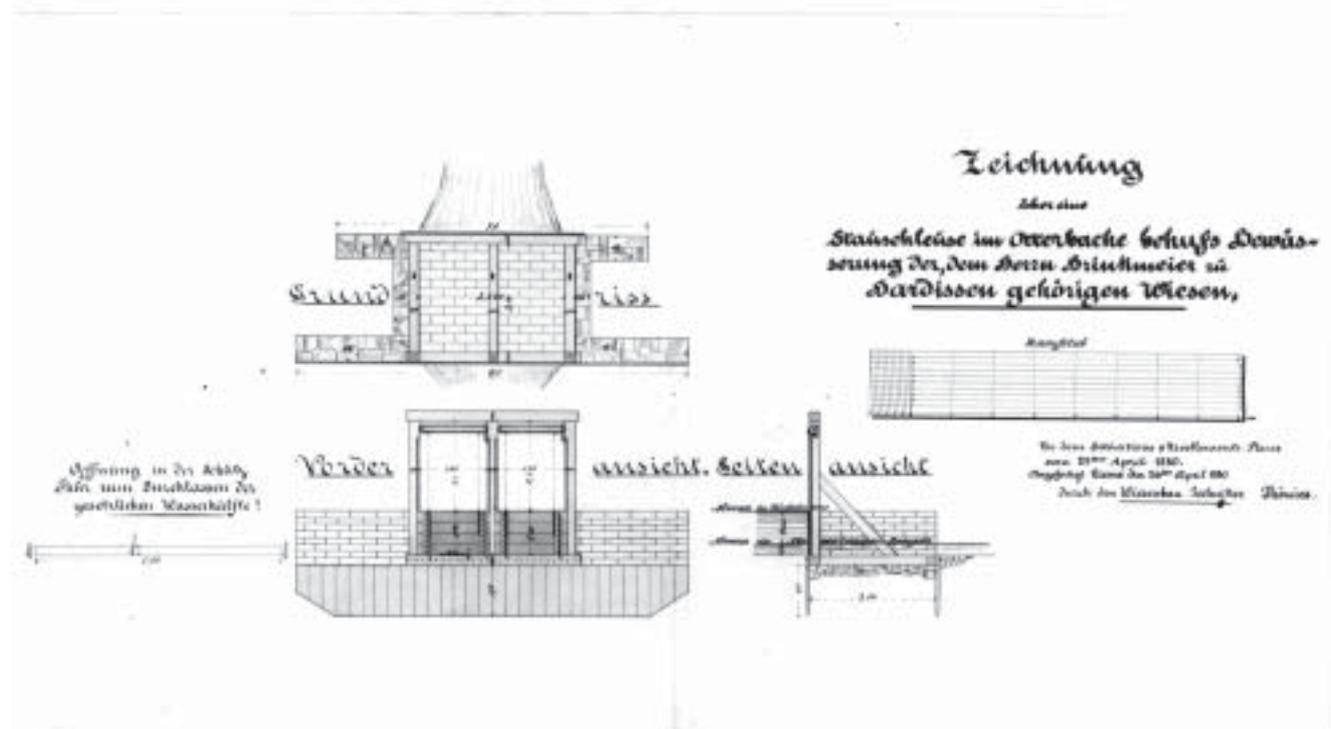


Fig. 66 (and Fig. 67) Plans for obtaining a permit for Brinkmeyer to build a dam, 1880. The Oetternbach's old course is recognizable.

uses gradually disappeared. The use of inorganic fertilizer made flood irrigation unnecessary. The system of water flow control devices and ditches gradually quit being used. The lack of human intervention, which increased dramatically during the 1960s due to a worker shortage, allowed the vegetation to take hold again, especially on the banks of the Oetternbach. The original vegetation was typically marsh-base stands of al-

der trees. Hardissen and Lückhausen had suffered huge declines in numbers of grazing livestock, and thus the river and valley areas not being used for agricultural purposes could have new value as environmentally protected sites.

In 1960, Franz Rodewald, the biology teacher from Blomberg, studied the Hardissen moor, and he found it to be so worthy of protecting that until his



dying day he relentlessly sought to have it be a legally protected nature reserve. In 1981, an area of approximately 11 hectares on the Oetternbach's left bank between Hardissen and Lieme was declared a protected nature reserve. Purchasing the expanses on the right bank of the Oetternbach across from the reserve failed because the *Land Regierungspräsident* of Nordrhein Westfalen (NRW) offered too low a price, and it was turned down. In 1976 and 1977, about 800 meters of the right bank were leveled off, using heavy machinery. This costly endeavor was supported by the

Land (of NRW) through a land improvement grant with 40% diminished subsidy. The *Land* President in Detmold was trying, at the same time, to secure the land expanses by administrative decree.

Since renewed cultivation of the areas right next to the stream banks produced little return from an agricultural viewpoint, in 1988, I decided to sell the area to the *Land* government in Detmold. But, because the agreement terms in the purchase contract were not adhered to, a legal battle ensued that went clear to the German Federal Republic's *Bundesgerichtshof* (=

Hardisser Moor steht jetzt unter Naturschutz

Lage-Hardissen (BPL). Zur Erhaltung von Lebensgemeinschaften und Lebensstätten bestimmter wildlebender Tierarten und wildwachsender Pflanzen hat der Regierungspräsident in Detmold jetzt das etwa 11 Hektar große Gebiet des Hardisser Moores in der Stadt Lage unter Naturschutz gestellt.

Damit wird die Fläche am Westufer des Oetternbaches endgültig gesichert, die bereits 1977 vom Regierungspräsidenten einstweilig sichergestellt worden war. Es handelt sich dabei um das einzige größere Kalkflachmoor im Kreis Lippe, das insbesondere wegen seiner reichhaltigen Flora ökologisch bedeutsam ist. Schützenswert sind vor allem

einige Orchideenarten, die im Kreis Lippe zur Zeit nur noch im Hardisser Moor anzutreffen sind. Ferner finden sich in diesem wertvollen Rückzugsgebiet für zahlreiche Tiere und Pflanzen auch Arten, die auf der roten Liste des Landes Nordrhein-Westfalen stehen. Durch die nunmehr erfolgte Unterschutzstellung sind in dem neuen Naturschutzgebiet alle Handlungen verboten, die zu seiner Zerstörung oder Veränderung führen könnten. Mit der Unterschutzstellung des Hardisser Moores, so der RP in einer Pressemitteilung, hofft er, für das Jahr 1981 einen guten Anfang zur Sicherung wertvoller Naturschutzgebiete getan zu haben.

Fig. 68: Excerpt from the Lippische Rundschau of February 6, 1981. 'Hardissen Moor has now become a protected area'. Lage-Hardissen (BPL). 'In order to preserve the natural symbiotic relationships and habitats of certain animal species living and plant species growing in the wild, the Regierungspräsident in Detmold has now set aside 11 hectares of the Hardissen Moor in the city of Lage as a protected reserve. In so doing, this expanse of land on the west bank of the Oetternbach, an area the Regierungspräsident had temporarily ordered to be protected, since 1977, is at last protected. This area is the single largest expanse of lime-based moorland in the Lippe district, and because of its substantial and varied vegetation is ecologically important. Especially in need of protection are mainly some orchid species, which at this time in the Lippe district, are only found in the Hardissen moor. Additionally, numerous species of plants and animals that appear on the 'red list' of Nordrhein-Westfalen can be found here in this very ecologically intact natural habitat. All endeavors and activities that could lead to destruction or alteration of the Hardissen Moor are, by designating this a protected nature reserve, now forbidden, as the RP [president] stated in a press release, where he also said he hopes he has made a good start to the new year, 1981, by securing the protection of valuable nature reserves.'

BGH; Germany's Supreme Court). On January 12, 1995, the BGH overturned the adjudication of the OLG = *Oberlandesgericht* (higher regional court of appeals) in Hamm, rendered earlier, and ordered the *Land* of NRW to pay the entire cost of the legal battle. It was this adjudication then that was most likely be-

hind the decision of the NRW *Land's* governmental representatives' readiness to draw up a new contract. This contract took effect in 1996 and enabled the rounding out of the reserve of the 'northern Hardissen moor'. After nearly 36 years of contention, this new decree went into effect in December of 1996. The

area of the 'southern Hardissen moor' was to be regulated in accordance with Lage's regional plan, with the Lippe district in charge of procedures.

We can only hope that the huge expense has paid off for both sides: that, further down the road, the farmers affected by the nature reserve, as well as the en-

vironmentalists, will not regret the extraordinary expenditure necessary to maintain this reserve. It is my view, and I think it is a view shared by my professional colleagues, that the prospects for a harmonious co-existence of agriculture and environmentalism are not bad, as long as both sides keep things in perspective.

VI. Church and School

1. The Heiden and Lieme Parishes

Originally, the entire *Bauerschaft* was probably part of the Heiden parish, at least as far back as 1375 when reference to ‘Herdessen in parochia Heden’ (‘Hardissen in the Heiden parish’) was mentioned in the records. The only contradiction to this is that only Lückhausen is listed under the Heiden parish in the oldest extant tax register, circa 1490. Hardissen, on the other hand (minus the Bökhaus and Lukebart farms), is listed under the Brake *Amt* (and the Lemgo St. Johann parish?). Of course, we have to take into account that there was at the time no firmly set differentiation between *Amt* and *Kirchspiel* (parish) boundaries.¹⁵⁰ Indeed, in 1498, there is again mention of ‘Hardissen in par[ochia] Heyden’.¹⁵¹

Church history in Heiden goes back a very long way: Christianizing of the Saxon area by the Franks had its roots in the late 8th century, and Heiden had a fairly large church building already by the year 1000. Some 100 years later, the church got its tower, and it is still there today. Sometime later in the Middle Ages, the church was remodeled and enlarged in Gothic style and made more suitable for the needs of a growing number of church-goers.¹⁵² In 1726, the three Lückhausen farmers joined the newly created parish in Lieme and paid a one-time fee of 180 Talers to raise the pastor’s salary. The road they used to take to church in Heiden was later plowed up but was still known as the ‘church road’. To no avail, the Lieme community tried to get the Hardissen and part of other *Bauerschaften* to join their small, and thus not very financially strong, church.¹⁵³ Today, the Hardissen village proper belongs

to three different parishes, because after a poll was conducted on January 1, 1994, the new residential area in its entirety was re-designated to the Lage (Maßbruch) parish.¹⁵⁴

There is no shortage of records of Hardissen’s religious life in the Middle Ages, and for other reasons, too, it is just not possible to write a ‘Church history’ of the village: the whole of life bore the Christian imprint so much; religious and ‘secular’ authority were so intimately connected. From the Reformation on, the Lippe sovereign was also the head of the church in Lippe and could determine which confession [i.e., denomination] existed there. During Simon VI’s rule, in 1600, the people of Lippe had to convert to the Reformed Church. In 1905, 406 of the 439 Hardissen residents were still members of the Protestant Reformed Church.¹⁵⁵ Typically, interwoven with this denomination was also a strict moral discipline that sought to regulate many aspects of daily life. The extensive religious rules during the 16th and 17th centuries reflected the efforts of the *Grafen* (counts) to exercise more influence over the actual lifestyles of their subjects.¹⁵⁶ Not the least of the reasons for doing this was the fear that unpunished sins would bring the wrath of God down on the *Land* [of Lippe]. We can assume that these objectives did not encounter a complete lack of understanding in the villages. One part of the regulations from ‘on high’ would also have been desirable here ‘below’; the other part was surely more difficult to put through. On the other hand, the constant breaking of the regulations did at least offer the ‘consolation’ of money coming into the Count’s till.

One of these types of stipulations was the forbidding of premarital sex. If parents had a baby earlier than nine months after the marriage, a fine was imposed, despite the fact that there were good grounds for this widespread practice that served as a ‘fertility test’ (not to mention other reasons). Records show that in the beginning the ban focused on preventing illegitimate births, as the care of these babies was, in fact, quite problematic in those days. If one got married, then the threatened penalty could still be avoided: In 1599, after his “Unpflicht” (irresponsibility) with Ilse Claus, Curt Wechter had the choice of ‘marrying her in 6 weeks or paying the fine’. The records note they agreed to get married. And there was yet another tragedy in store for this Wächter family, and records show that the ‘merciful sovereignty’ had little mercy in this case: In 1663/64, ‘Wechter Alheit’s daughter married Brink Henrich’s farmhand, but 5 months after the marriage, she gave birth to twins, who lived’. Since ‘the woman died following childbirth, yet both of the poor babies survived’, the farmhand petitioned the ‘merciful’ sovereignty to forgive half the fine for his *Unpflicht*, or at least reduce the fine. But, the 2 ½ Talers fine remained on the books under the provision approved by the Count. This was an excessively harsh punishment by today’s standards. On the other hand, in 1666, it was Jobst Bökhaus’ misfortune to have to pay the full sum of 6 Talers. It was noted that what was most reprehensible in this instance was that, despite this, ‘the bride went to the church like a virgin, with her hair hanging down.’¹⁵⁷

Women had some protection in that they could sue to make a man marry them, if a marriage proposal could be proven. Ilsabein Tasche from Lückhausen had initiated a suit against Jobst, Obermeier’s stepson, that went on for years. He got her pregnant and

Wilhelmine Feger, mit Hardissen gebürtig,
 hat bei mir 3 Jahre gedient, und sich in
 dieser Zeit sehr brav und fleißig betragen,
 weshalb, in einem weichen Fortkommen schnell
 vorwärts wird.
 Leistrup, den 8ten August
 1838
 Colen Kesting

Fig. 69 Farmer Kesting in Leistrup certified in 1838 that Wilhelmine Feger born in Hardissen has been working for him for three years, ‘and has conducted herself in a consistently loyal and diligent manner during this time period.’ Wilhelmine put this testimony in her Eheprozeß (marriage proceedings) (in order to dispel doubts of her future father-in-law, Brinkmeyer, about her good reputation).

then would not consider marrying her, whereas she said he had promised to marry her. The reverse could also be true, as men could sue to get a woman to uphold her agreeing to a marriage proposal. That was of the greatest importance if the bride was an heiress to or a widow of a large farm (see the earlier reference to Hans Henrich Niebuhr). In 1838, heir Adolph Brinkmeyer had to sue, not his [future] wife, Wilhelmine Feger, but her father, who would not give his consent.¹⁵⁸

The Church in Early Modern Times was a part of the sovereign entity system and also itself exercised

ruling power. Like manorial lords, it had claims to taxes and services, in addition to the usual fees for official functions it performed. For example, Niedermeyer in Lückhausen had a yearly obligation to provide the pastor (in Lieme) with a load of wood, a “Wurst”, and loaf of bread; for the sexton, he was obligated to deliver a load of wood every two years, and send him a bushel of rye, and a “Mettwurst” and loaf of bread every year.¹⁵⁹ Sometimes, when times were hard, the *Kolone* were not happy about this arrangement: In 1683, Bökhaus and his neighbor, Fellensieck near Heßloh, refused to deliver the loads of wood for the church, and gave as a reason that the Church had enough money and could pay for it [getting wood hauled].¹⁶⁰ And they were essentially right, but the local pastor was not to blame for that: his monetary wage was just a part of his salary, and thus he had instructions to get additional income. So, if he chose not to take on a lot more sideline agricultural jobs, he had to make wood-hauling demands on his parishioners. When Pastor Clüver summoned a grenadier from the castle in Detmold, in 1738, to see to it that the demanded services were provided, Röhr and Held wrote the reigning countess that, ‘at any rate, they had enough services to provide to sovereigns and estate owners, and [that] they would have had to let their own wood-hauling sit, and [the pastor] had a wagon and horse and could haul firewood himself.’¹⁶¹

It wasn’t only the Church that was over the parish members, the quite prominent farmers of the community also took part as “Dechen” (deacons), looking after religious, school, and charity accounts. There is an inscription on the Heiden Church clock with the names of the two *deken* (deacons) holding office in 1466.¹⁶² At that time, the office was probably identical to the offices of today’s church elder or church board mem-

ber. As a result of the Reformation, the concept of deacon applied only to those who administered church finances and proceeds, whereas the actual elders oversaw the religious education. In practice, though, one person would frequently hold both offices, and the designations often got mixed up. Cord Bökhaus signed his name for the Heiden [church] *Gemeinde* in 1590, and so apparently held a church board position.¹⁶³

In 1781, Deacon Feger asked to be released from his office after nine years of service, because he was not asked for anything anyhow. As it turned out, his colleague, Meyer of Bentrup, had to go it alone with the work on the church real estate records.¹⁶⁴ In 1773, the deacons in charge of funds for the poor box, like Johann Christoph Brinkmeyer No. 9, usually had only a little money to manage, the interest then going to the parish poor. The *Gemeinde* was overjoyed then when, unexpectedly, it received a substantial sum of money earmarked for the poor.

That donation came about this way: in 1717, the letter of a certain Christoph Feger arrived at the sovereign’s Detmold castle. Feger was one of the sons from Farm No. 5, and wrote the letter from across the world in Batavia on Java in Southeast Asia. Other folks from Lippe had emigrated there, where The Netherlands managed colonial properties and had trade offices. Feger had even taken on a bit of a Dutch accent and referred to himself as an ‘unimportant but loyal subject’ of the Count of Lippe. The letter, written in Feger’s own handwriting, indicated he had evidently attained a good position there. According to Feger, he had lived outside Lippe for almost 30 years; 23 of them were in a branch office of the Dutch “Kompanie”, partly in the military, partly as a “freyborger” (free citizen): ‘I alone freely confess that due to being so far away, my duty as a subject to your ‘merciful grace

V. Feger's Brief an den Grafen

225

Hochgebohrne Reichs Graff,
Quarzigste Brunn

Ich Hochgebohrte Gnade gnüßlich an die
 gerungen das gethene Ordentlich zu vermelden, daß
 ich mich vorer, meine unterdanigste Befähigkeit auch
 so eifrigste Diensten einig hoch gerungen zu
 offerieren. In dem Jahr 1750 habe verstanden
 daß ich in gewisse Diensten bin gerungen worden
 20 Jahr nun auf Batavia in Ostindien bin, so
 d. d. Compagnie Fleiß Carter thill in gedulten
 Compagnie anhalten, thill all Sachver
 nicht fallen, und so lang ich God gefallt, aufhalten
 werde. Allereuf ich bekennen, daß ich die güt
 abzugeben meine unterdanigste Pflicht gegen die
 Hochgebohrte Gnade all meine gnädigste, laudliche
 nicht allein mich vermindert, sondern auch
 mich angefordert ist, daß ich davon gerung
 offenkundig nach gethene Befähigkeit abgeben
 wolle, wollen aber das Vorbit in die über

226

nach über Batavia die Briefe an mich schon gesch
 über zu senden, die mir die mit die Vaterland
 Flot in meine Hände für hochgebohrte gnädigst oder.
 Will ersehe ich meine unterdanigste Pflicht, daß die alle
 mächtige God die Hochgebohrte Gnade wohl der Hochgebohrte
 Familie mit seiner gütlichen protection allezeit bene, welche
 Eurer mit unterdanigstem respect

Hochgebohrne Reichs Graff
Quarzigste Brunn

Ich Hochgebohrte Gnade

Batavia d. 22^{ten} Novbr
1757

unterdanigst-gehorsamste Diener
Christoph Feger mpp

Figs. 70-71 The beginning and the end of Christoph Feger's letter from Batavia in East India/Asia, in which he informs the Count of Lippe about a generous donation that is being made. The abbreviation 'mpp' (manu propria) appearing after the signature of 'the [your] loyal and obedient subject' shows that he himself signed the letter.

Count' as my most merciful patriarch and sovereign, not only has not lessened, but I have felt increasingly compelled to make a tangible sign to discharge the debt of obligation: Feger then offered the sovereign a gift, that Feger intended to send to his brother, Wilhelm Feger, in Herford, via an acquaintance. That was because, as a free citizen of Batavia, Christoph Feger was not permitted to send money out of Batavia.

This donation totaled 253 Talers and was to be dedicated to the poor of the Heiden parish. After Christoph Feger's death in 1732, the will stated that the sum was to be increased to 600 Talers. Unfortunately, it is not known if the interest did indeed reach the poor, because the capital sum soon fell into various hands. At that time, the Lippe sovereign house was one that really needed every Groschen of cash it could get. Counts who had been living a life of great luxury had nearly depleted the treasury to the point that they even had to defer accepting the letter from the Prince that had just been issued, because they could not pay the imperial court fee required for its delivery. At the time, Count Simon Henrich Adolf and his wife, Johannette Wilhelmine, were headed for financial ruin. A few years earlier, the Countess had bought the Borch farm in Detmold, so she could build a Lutheran church there for her fellow Lutherans. The fortuitous bequest fell into the Countess's hands at just the right time: she picked up the money in Holland and paid the interest that was due on the (farm) purchase. Her own interest payment owed to the poor, she postponed for nine years!

Heiden parish also did not want the money to go to those [poor] in need, but instead wanted to profit from it themselves: After they secured the rights to half of the capital amount, apparently about 1753, the pastor von Cölln used the money to have a couple of rooms added on to his living quarters in the parsonage. The initi-

al donation of 253 Talers did then indeed fall into the hands of a certain type of 'needy folks' in the Gemeinde, even if it did not actually reach those folks for which Christoph Feger intended it: Over the protests of Pastor Krecke, the capital was used to help out farms that were in debt, namely the Niebuhr and Held farms in Hardissen and the Meyer and Evert farms in Niewald, who are said to have reclaimed mortgaged property with it.¹⁶⁵ Apparently, they then mortgaged other land, so whether their [own] interest obligation to the poor reached the real poor or not, is not known.

From the Thirty Years' War [1618-1648] to the present, there is no better source for information about the Hardissen populace than the Heiden church records. Fortunately, they are for the most part extant, as are the records of the Lieme parish, founded later. The registry office in Hörstmar has been responsible for Hardissen records since 1876.

Church was extremely important, not only in material and spiritual matters but also symbolically: here folks met on a Sunday and had a special standing there. And that meant it was also important where one sat and which standing was attached to that. The farmers guarded their rights to their own pews as carefully as they guarded their fields. And, too, there were proper squabbles about them in church: For example, in 1652, Meister David Möller from Heiden argued with Obermeier of Lückhausen over the aisle leading to a set of pews!¹⁶⁶

Just like the living have a place inside the church, so, too, the dead had a specific cemetery burial plot. Unfortunately, the headstones in the Heiden church cemetery were done away with by the 1850s. This happened because by 1844, the old cemetery was no longer used because it was not large enough to accommodate the larger population. The new resting place

L. 434 N^o 2

Lage i. L., den 1. Januar 1893.

Baumaterialien.

stähler, Dachlatten, Spalterlatten,
Bretter u. Pitch-Pine.

offenrohre und Cisternbecken,
Cement.

Schwemmsteine.

I Träger.

Bruch- und Ziegelsteine,
Kalklieferung etc.

Rechnung

Flur- und Trottoir-Platten,
steinische Fliesen und Hörtterplatten.

Carbolinsäure.

Holl. blau gekämpfte Dachziegel.

Englischer Dachziegel.

Falzziegel u. Dachpappe.

Kohlen en gros

für
Hausbrand, Kieselstein, Schmelze und
Kesselfeuerung,
gewaschen u. trocken gesiebt.

in der Handlung des Herrn Hof z. J. Gilbert Brückmeyer

VON **Adolph Luetgebrune,**
Baumaterialienhandlung.

Reclamationen setzen nur 8 Tage nach Datum der Rechnung Berücksichtigung.

Zahlbar hier, netto per comptant.

1893	Wie ausgegeben:		
April 6.	Oben 1 Stück Steinwerk		4 25
Juli 2	" 2 Pack Cement	4,00	8 00
Sept 7	" Latten 157/5	67,5	7 1/2 5 06
" 12	" 4 Bünd Zinkbleche	105	4 20
" "	" 5 fünf Fuß Ziegel		1 75
" 18	" Bruchstein 1+6 = 7,8	29 19	5 51
			<hr/>
		Mk:	28,77

Vorfinden Zahlung anfallend
Lage, den 21. October 1893
Adolph Luetgebrune

Fig. 74 The driveway to the cemetery, in the 1960s.



ered entranceway was added. Here, a total of 56 names of soldiers from both world wars, who had fallen in combat or were missing-in-action, were inscribed on sandstone slabs; among those listed were folks from Hardissen who had come there after 1945.¹⁶⁸ For this, an older monument erected after World War I, honoring those who were killed in that war, was torn down.

Particularly important to religious life in more modern times is the ‘Frauenhilfe’ (Women’s Aid Group). The local *Frauenhilfe* has met weekly at Lückhausen St. No. 1 since 1957, when Else Weege (1907-1988) had an extra room built onto her house just for this

group to have a place to meet. Since that time, too, Frau Weege and her circle of aid workers have also seen to the preparations and set up for the annual Hardissen seniors Christmas party. Since 1977, Councilman Helmut Biere has also shared in this responsibility. The money needed for this event came not only from the Heiden church, but also from fund-raising drives and from uncollected hunting lease fees. For several years, the harvest festivals had been held in the hall, and later were held in Heiden’s old parsonage, since the pastor himself wanted to take over arranging things. In the last few years, the AWO has hosted the Christmas party at the *Werreanger* (a restaurant).¹⁶⁹



Figs. 75-76 View through the old cemetery gate, looking onto the Feger farm, around 1960.



Fig. 76a The monument stone bears the inscription: 'In memory of the fallen heroes of the world war, 1914-20[!], from Hardissen. May the loyal dead not be forgotten.' Roses entwining a sword decorates the stone.





Figs. 77 and 78 The stone slabs at the entrance to the cemetery's hall.



2. *Hardissen School*

In the distant past, the schooling system had always been a component of the Church. The first recorded mention of a few boys getting school instruction by the Heiden *Küster* came in 1594. The period of time of the “Konfessionen” (i. e., when the denomination of a sovereign determined the denomination of the *Land*, and all the sovereign’s subjects in it) put the *Land* sovereigns in charge of the care of educating pupils, in which the teaching of reading, writing, arithmetic and singing was tightly integrated with the dominant course of instruction, which was religious studies. But we need to be careful about how much we emphasize the school’s influence, as we need to consider that from early childhood on, boys and girls took part in the working world of agriculture. Frequently, there simply

was not a lot of time left over for school work. And for the Hardissen pupils, it was an exceedingly long ways away to go to school. That’s why Feger, in 1710, started sending his children to Lage or Lieme, both not so far away, that also had schools during that time. However, he had not reckoned with Brede, the schoolmaster at Heiden School, who stood to lose some money because of this move; so, Brede had a cauldron of Feger’s confiscated, and finally forced the children’s return to Heiden. In 1726, as the Lückhausen folks switched to Lieme, the *Küster* was able to secure the grain tax of 3 bushels of rye from there for the rest of his life.¹⁷⁰

We really know very little about the ‘success’ of school instruction. One thing for sure is that many of the Lippe farmers in Early Modern Times could read and write – the more prosperous they were, it could

Fig. 79 Christmas party given by the Frauenhilfe (Women’s Aid Group), 1957, with Festspiele (plays) by the school children.





Fig. 80 Celebration address by Mayor Bökhaus.

Fig. 81 Party for families of the Frauenhilfe, 1958.





Fig. 82 Party for families of the Frauenhilfe, 1958.



Figs. 83-85 Snapshots of the Frauenhilfe's children's festival in the summer of 1958.

Fig. 84



Fig. 85





Fig. 86 In addition to his numerous activities involving sports, Hermann Ballach also helped out much with Frauenhilfe events and programs, he is seen here in 1958.



Fig. 87 Ernst Heuer at a family celebration, 1958.



Fig. 88 Senior citizens' celebration, 1959, Ernst Heuer, Else Weege, Ernst Brüggemann, Karl Bökhaus, among others.

Fig. 89 The Frauenhilfe's Christmas party, 1959.





Fig. 90 Distributing the Nicholas sacks to the oldest citizens of the Gemeinde (village community), 1959.

Fig. 91 A theater presentation, 1960: Frau Kleine-Ostmann, Frau Lina Voß, Frau Hillemeier.



generally be expected the more likely it was they had these abilities. Sometimes it is just by chance that we learn of these skills, as was the case in the previously mentioned example of farmer Obermeier, who had been doing his own bookkeeping from about the middle of the 17th century on.

In 1731, Feger, Röhr, Niebuhr, Held, Brinkmeyer, and Widow Bökhaus signed a power of attorney for their lawyer.¹⁷¹ More precise information does not occur until 1757/58, at the start of the Seven Years' War. French troops came through Hardissen twice, boarded and bedded at farms, had people provide for them and their livestock, demanded hauling and other services. It was also not unusual for farmers not to get their horse and wagon back when the French moved on. The government in Lippe authorized forms for noting and recording damages incurred. In the end, this effort didn't amount to anything, as the *Land* had no means to pay for damages. Yet for today's readers, these *Schadenrechnungen* (damage bills) are interesting for two reasons: because of the costs of the war and because folks writing up the bills had to personally sign them. Nearly all owners of the larger Hardissen farms could sign their names, some of them with nice handwriting, others with not such refined handwriting. The same was true of Brüggemann and Wächter, *Bauerrichter* (farmer-judges), who could sign their names, whereas most of the *Kolone*, all six *Einlieger*, and the widows Niebuhr and Sep signed by marking down three crosses.¹⁷² This finding is not exactly a reflection of the 'quality' of Heiden's school instruction because many of those signing had married into Hardissen.

Children from Hardissen, but not those from Lückhausen, continued to be educated in Heiden; from 1751 on, they were divided into two groups (accor-

Herr Simon Henrich Heldt Bauerrichter Hardissen		No. 5		Reich. Gr.	
I. Gut geliefert an Korn und Fourage.					
Korn					
Stroh					
Futter					
Kraut					
Eis					
Eis					
II. Zu welchem Ansehung für 2 Offizier und 10 Mann					
Der Edele, Der, Unteroffizier, Sold, 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann					
In dem, über den Kopf					
III. In Jahren praxiert.					
1757 De 17 Tage mit 2 Pferde mit den Kindern und 10 Mann					
IV. Schaden an den Feld- und Garten-Früchten					
Korn					
Stroh					
Futter					
Futter					
Kraut, Getreide, Heu					
Korn					
Kraut					
V. In Schaden und Dieb, so nicht relligiert werden.					
Futter					
Korn 2 Stück, der der der der der 1757					
Korn, Heu u.					
VI. Das mit Unrecht genommen und räumert werden.					
In dem: Fuder					
In dem: Korn					
In dem: Heu					
In dem: Stroh 6 Stück					
In dem: und Schilf					
In dem: 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann u.					
In dem: 10 Mann und 10 Mann					
In dem: 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann					
In dem: 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann					
In dem: 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann, 10 Mann					
VII. Schaden an den Feld- und Garten-Früchten.					
Korn, Heu, Stroh, Fuder u.					
Simon Henrich Heldt					
270 1.					

Fig. 92 Calculation of damages from the Seven Years' War, signed by Simon Henrich Heldt. He sustained losses of 270 Reichs Taler and a Groschen in 1757/58.

ding to gender, and then later, by achievement regardless of gender): the *Kantorschule* (school taught by the cantor) and the *Küsterschule* (school taught by the sexton). It was only because of the Revolution of 1848 that liberal teachers had pushed for division of church and state, and that lasted only until 1864, ending as soon as the conservative religious leaders and the reactionary officials again gained the upper hand. The Lippe schools did not experience school administration with 'secular' views until 1914. And during the 1920s there was intense fighting over setting up the Lippe *Volksschule* as a denominational school.¹⁷³ 1937 saw a tighter centralization, with the dismantling of the school *Gemeinden* that had been set up in 1849. A school headmaster was named to work in tandem with the school director to perform administra-

tive duties; there was no longer a school board consisting of *Gemeinde* citizens.

Around 1870, some of the Hardissen children attended school in Heiden, others went to school in Hörstmar, where, at first, they had enough space for them. But in 1874, the number of Hörstmar's own children had grown so much that Hörstmar did not want to also educate the 17 students attending from neighboring areas. So, Hörstmar School asked Heiden School to take them. Following that, Hardissen developed a plan to start its own school.

Pastor Meyer looked favorably on Hardissen folks, and had shortly before written about 'their religious sense, respectability, and moral decency.'¹⁷⁴ Hardissen farms, which were run efficiently, also contributed a great deal to his congregation's income. In 1876, when there was to be a new *Küsterhaus* (sex-



Fig. 93 *Hardissen School, 1927, with the school board: upper row, left, Röhr, left to right in the front row, Feger; Hagenböhrer, Pastor Reichardt, Teachers Grabenmeier, Wiebusch, Fischer, and Schäfer.*

ton house) in Heiden, eight Hardissen *Kolone*/farmers stated they were withholding approval because they intended to start their own school in their *Bauerschaft*. At that time, three local children still attended Hörstmar School, one child attended school in Hagen, 12 in Lage, and 40 in Heiden, thus the new school district totaled 56 pupils, boys and girls. The Heiden school board felt there were good grounds for splitting off Hardissen School from Heiden School: the inhabitants in Hardissen were ‘particularly well off’, and there would be enough children in the future, and they ‘expect more new residences will go up on the Hardissen moor,’ especially if the residents did not have to worry about their children having to go so far away to school. This was still well before much construction had occurred on the moor, so in hindsight this prediction could be considered absolutely correct. The following year the Lippe *Landtag* (parliament) and the Prince agreed to eliminate the second school teacher position in Heiden, and authorized a school teacher for Hardissen School.

Pastor Meyer took over as the first Chairman of the school committee, and Kolon Grünemann was in charge of the bookkeeping. A garden of Niebuhr’s in the village was chosen as the construction site. The Hardissen tradesmen, master carpenter, Berkemeier, and master mason, Kespohl, participated in the construction. The new school building was completed near the end of 1877; it was a one-story structure made from quarry stone, and was designed by Luetgebrune, the builder/contractor. A field of Lukebart’s was also bought for the school. Hardissen folks were eager to get their colleagues in Heiden to reimburse them for the 7,200 Marks construction cost, through proceeds from selling the old *Küsterhaus*. The interested parties (in the school) had already done needed

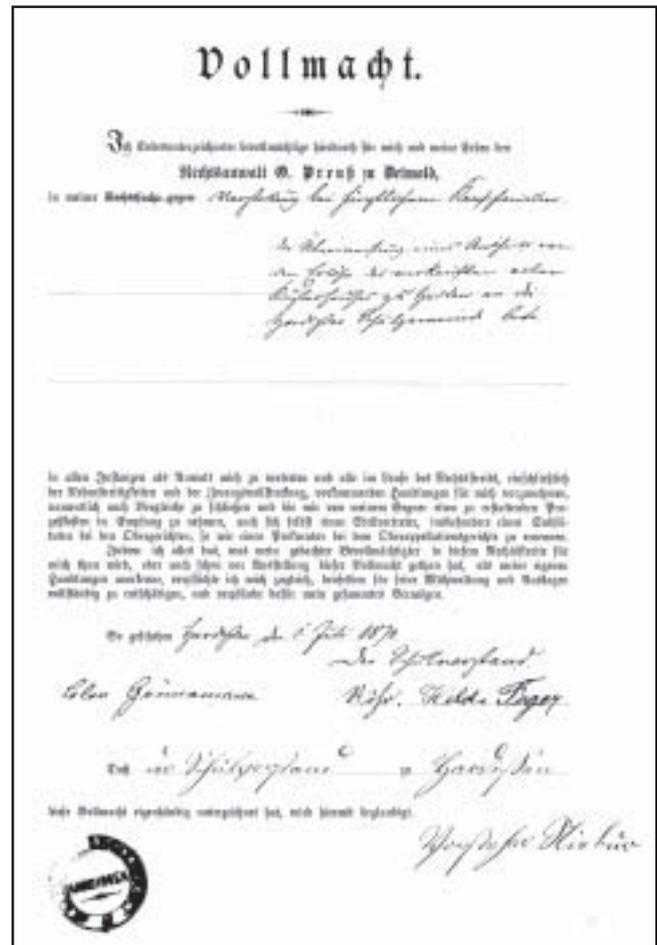


Fig. 94 In 1878, the Hardissen school board gave the attorney, Preuß, power of attorney to get monies for the new school Gemeinde by securing the sale of the *Küsterhaus* (sexton’s house) in Heiden.



Fig. 95 School photo with teacher Geller, after 1907.

hauling themselves, saving about 900 Marks, or footed the costs of hauling.¹⁷⁵

On October 1, 1877, August Köller started as the first teacher in Hardissen's new school. He had been born in Humfeld, and before this teaching position, he had been warden and teacher in the 'salvation institution' Grünau near Schötmar, where at-risk children and teens were given a Christian education. The nature of operations of this institution, grounded in Pietism, had made Köller a particularly attractive candidate for Thelemann, the arch conservative on the *Konsistorialrat* (governing council). It was Thelemann's responsibility to supervise the school, and he explicitly found Köller to be particularly suited for the position, an exceptionally capable man. After Köller died in 1891, Christian Reese from Lemgo, previously a teacher in Schlangen and in Cappel, became teacher here. In

Thelemann's opinion, whereas Reese was 'not without talent'; he did have to take on outside work due to the low number of pupils. His wife, like all wives of the teachers who came after her, taught 'feminine hand crafts'. In 1907, following an argument with the school board chairman, Held, Reese quit and transferred to Lage. His successor was Hermann Geller, born in Lage, who had been teaching in Leese. When he assumed the teaching position, he got a salary increase of 300 Marks over the previous 1662 Marks of his predecessor, with the salary still paid out quarterly.

During the 1918/19 school year, Geller taught a total of 59 children: 27 in the lower grades (1st - 3rd) and 32 in the upper grades (4th -8th). He was transferred to Bösingfeld in autumn of 1919, and Heinrich Grabenmeier took Geller's teaching position in Hardissen. Grabenmeier was raised on a farm near Pyr-

Fig. 96 School photo with teacher Geller, 1912.





Fig. 97 Teacher Grabenmeier with his son and Frieda Hebrok at the entrance of the school, around 1923. The inscription from 1877 contains the verse: “Lasset die Kindlein zu mir kommen und wehret ihnen nicht” [‘Let the little children come unto me and hinder them not.’]

mont, and several of his former pupils still remember him. The school’s upper-level classes were taught in the morning; the lower ones in the afternoon. Generally, though, the students did not have the part of the day they weren’t in class free, as they had to help out on the farm. Grabenmeier led the school through good times and bad. 1920-1922 saw remodeling and renovating of the school, and just like when the building was first constructed, Berkemeier, master carpenter from Hardissen, and Kespohl, master mason from Büllinghausen moor, took care of some of the needed work; electric lighting was also installed. Very soon thereafter such work might not have been possible: In 1922/23, inflation caused the school outlays to climb to the 273 billion-Reichsmark (RM) level, with Frau Diekmann still only getting 4000 Marks in May 1923 for cleaning and heating the schoolhouse; in July she got 30,000, and in October in excess of a billion Marks. Unfortunately the two endowments started in 1889/96, as specified in the wills of Mr. and Mrs. Bökhaus and Julie Bökhaus, were completely depleted when subsequently the currency was devaluated. Before, interest from 350 RM in assets had supported poor school children with gifts, mostly at Christmas-time. In 1933, the total number of pupils in both levels had dropped to 36 — it was no real surprise then that Grabenmeier was able to report to his supervisor, with satisfaction, that ‘the schoolhouse is in good shape. The school is exceptionally well stocked with curricular materials. The pupils’ library comprises 85 small volumes.’¹⁷⁶

The population increase Hardissen experienced after the war caused the school to be back to capacity. Instead of the 33 pupils there were in 1937, pupils numbered 82 in 1947, and 103 in 1951. The work load was far too heavy now for only one teacher;

Fig. 98 First - third grades, 1937, with teacher Grabenmeier.



Fig. 99 Hardissen School, around 1950.



Fig. 100 Teacher Stukenbrok's classes, 3rd and 4th grades, 1951: Karin Siek, Hannelore Döring, Hildegard Lange, Gerda Röhm, Brunhilde Günther, Inge Hebrok, Hans-Joachim Brigert, Erwin Schmuck, Rudi Katrein, Günter Bergmann, Alfred Kramp, Achim Fau; Anneliese Ballach, Margarete Lange, Gerda Möller, Brigitte Brotmann, Ingrid Kupietz, Jochen Schlingmann, Ulrich Feger, Ewald Röhm, Hans Wegener, Werner Kortekamp, Rolf Eickerling, Udo Zantow, Dieter Herrmann, Achim Michler.



Fig. 101 View of the school before it underwent reconstruction in 1951.

Fig. 102 Behind the school after it was renovated.





Fig. 103 Grand opening of the school, 1952, in the meeting room at Heuer's Lokal. Mayor Bökhaus is dancing, with a cigar in his mouth. In the foreground is the architect, Stüker.

around 1947/48, a second teacher was employed for a year in Hardissen. This was Friedrich Vogt, later rector of the school in Pivitsheide VH, and for many years, Detmold's mayor. Due to lack of space, Vogt taught his 20 or so pupils in Grabenmeier's living room.¹⁷⁷ School building improvements were urgently needed. Due to lack of funds, the municipal Council kept postponing the issue, and then during 1951/52, the school was remodeled, with a second classroom added and teacher's quarters moved. Fräulein Stukenbrok, who had been assisting teacher Grabenmeier for a while, now got a permanent position as the second teacher. At the age of 65, in July of 1953, Grabenmeier retired, after having had, as the *Gemeinde* Council put it, a 'beneficial effect' for over 34 years in the same town. He died in 1961 at the age of 73.

His successor, Walter Pfaff, who was formerly the teacher in Ohrsen, took over on August 1, 1953. The following year, Pfaff established a 'public library' ["Volksbücherei"], that he had been planning for quite some time. The opening had had to be postponed during the years of short funds when the school was being remodeled. A public drive evidently raised the start-up capital. In December, 1955, the *Gemeinde* Council toured the remodeled school: the new upper-level classroom, and a new basement classroom for the laboratory for Physics and Chemistry classes.¹⁷⁸

The situation of Hardissen School seemed to be good. There was, however, one problem: the dispersed locations of the residences in the long run kept causing them trouble. It was a given that Lückhausen residents belonged with Lieme, and the residential area



Fig. 104 Grand opening of the school, 1952. The new teacher, Fräulein Stukenbrok, talking with Architect Stüker.

on the Hardissen moor was being developed in a westerly direction. As far back as the turn of the century, five new residents' religious denominations were located in Lage, and they probably also sent their children to school there. Other pupils from the area attended school in Hagen, and after the mid-1950s pupils also attended Maßbruch school in Lage. In the summer of 1958, the village first entertained thoughts about forming a consolidated school district with Hagen and Hörstmar. Nothing came of the negotiations. The declining number of pupils in Hardissen (in 1961, 66 across two classes) made continuing to think about their own Volksschule not a feasible option, in the long run; even though the Council gave a different signal, and in 1962 decided to go ahead with 24,000 Marks worth of improvements to the athletic track. Two years later, the

spot stood empty: Hörstmar and Hagen each put up new schools with four classrooms, leaving Hardissen out of the plans. On top of that, the new school in Hagen was toward Waddenhausen, so the opposite direction from Hardissen. Teacher Pfaff applied for, and got, the head teaching position in Hagen, and, on April 1, 1964, left Hardissen. During this same time, Fräulein Stukenbrok retired. There was nobody to take the Hardissen teaching position. Backed into a corner, the Council made an odd decision: 'the decision was made to build a four-classroom school, but before doing so, negotiations with the town of Lage over consolidation would take place.'

In the meantime, though, the school could barely keep operating, and parents threatened a school strike in order to bring notice to the lack of teachers. In the



Fig. 104a Grand opening of the school, 1952. Included in the photo: Teacher Grabenmeier and Ernst Heuer.

Fig. 104b In the Hardissen school-yard, around 1955.





Fig. 104c The handball team with teacher Pfaff, May, 1957.

Fig. 104d Departure of the school's graduates, c. 1960, with teachers Pfaff and Fräulein Stukenbrok.





Fig. 105 The former Hardissen school, in 1997.

end, Fräulein Fricke, a temporary teacher, took over teaching the lower-level classes, while the pupils in the upper grades were transferred to Lage and Hörstmar. Mayor Bökhaus's efforts to keep Hardissen School did not succeed. Heinrich Helle, his successor, paved the way for a solution to the school problem – but this solution could only happen if Hardissen School were to be closed. In November 1964, the *Regierungspräsident* suggested a consolidation of Hardissen School with the schools of Lage and Hörstmar, which the Hardissen Council unanimously turned down. And they, just as unanimously, expressed a desire to merge only

with Lage, and have those children who lived closer to Hörstmar petition to go there as visiting pupils. And that is just what happened: the Hardissen *Volkschule* has stood empty since spring of 1965, most of the children attended the Maßbruch school in Lage, and a few went to Hörstmar as visiting pupils. The newly consolidated Lage-Hardissen School District lasted only a short time. By summer of 1968, it had to be dissolved in order to simplify the imminent division of the earlier *Volksschulen* into a *Grundschule* and a *Hauptschule* and orienting of the surrounding areas to the Lage *Hauptschule*.

VII. *Politics and Gemeinde Administration*

The politically independent *Gemeinde* of Hardissen also found its days were numbered, after the *Gemeinde* school closed. As the Council records indicate, on February 1, 1967, Mayor Helle came ‘to talk about the administrative structure.’ At the close of a lively discussion of the pros and cons of forming a consolidated *Gemeinde*, i. e., Lage itself along with the surrounding communities annexed to it, the mayor reported that Lage city representatives had said they wanted to have a noncommittal discussion with the Hardissen *Gemeinde* about the new administrative structure.’ This discussion was to take place a week later in the Heuer Restaurant. Soon, these ‘unofficial discussions’ turned serious.

In March, Lage town correspondence was received, stating that a study committee, consisting of two members from each of the surrounding *Gemeinden*, was to be formed for purposes of regional development of Lage and surrounding areas. The Council designated Mayor Helle and Councilman Karl-Ernst Bökhaus to represent Hardissen. On November 28, 1967, after a charged discussion, the Council voted unanimously to negotiate with Lage about regional change and formation of a *Großgemeinde* (consolidated municipalities) There was no other option. One year later, the regional plan of the Interior Minister of Nordrhein Westfalen for the restructuring of the Detmold district was ready.

The Hardissen councilmen were of the unanimous, though not overly enthusiastic, opinion that ‘if this is to be a *Gemeinde* restructuring, it can only make sense on the basis of this proposal. On the large scale, however, throughout the legal settlement, the individually im-

pacted *Gemeinden* had no further role in its ‘transactions’ for the *Großgemeinde*. The last meeting of the Council took place in the *Heidekrug* (pub) on December 29, 1969, three days before the annexation of the small town into the *Großgemeinde*. Hardissen’s last councilmen were: Heinrich Helle, Karl-Ernst Bökhaus, Friedrich Fischer, Ernst Heuer, Heinrich Kleine-Ostmann, Jr., Kurt Schulz, and Ernst Weege.¹⁸⁰

Had the Hardissen *Gemeinde* “always and forever” been so independent? Or, when did self-governance actually start? What form did ‘politics’ in the village take in Early Modern Times? When did the old *Bauerschaft* become a *Gemeinde* with rights of self-governance, and its inhabitants become more citizens of a state than subjects of an individual sovereign? We really still do not know, unfortunately, too much about how the rural population perceived their shared civic/political identity. Momentous events, mainly wars, could remain in memory for a long time, and even color consciousness of time, so much so that people figured their own age by them. For example, Cordt Feger appeared as a witness in 1606, and when questioned as to his age, he responded that he would soon be 70 years old, because he had been 19 ‘when Rittbergh was marched on’ (the military campaign against the territories of the Count of Rietberg in 1556/57).¹⁸¹ The sovereign, who resided in Detmold, and sometimes stayed in Brake, was quite nearby; for a while, his officials no doubt exercised power in a somewhat up close and personal manner. The old Lippe authority was a far cry from the present-day faceless bureaucracy.

It was very rare that the ruling family’s subjects

came into such close contact with them as did Johann Röhr of Hardissen, who, in 1619, at the start of the Thirty Years' War, went with Count Otto of Lippe-Brake on the campaign to Bohemia. Count Otto was at the time head of the cavalry in service to Count Ernst of Mansfeld, and fought until 1620 on the side of the reformed 'Winter King', Friedrich, and the Protestant ranks.¹⁸²

In the event of emergencies, Lippe's citizens were organized into a *Landcontingent*. Since there could be attacks, they had to participate in defense of the homeland either as marksmen with guns, or 'armed' with spears. Very important spots in the *Bauerschaft* area were a *Slach* (Schlag) to *Hardessen* (gate at Hardissen), which was to be defended from Heiden on, and, at Lukebart's farm, the so-called *Honderbath* that was an important passageway near Lage that could be

closed in times of danger. There was, appropriately, someone who guarded the gate, supervised by Lage's *Vogt*.¹⁸³ Such a *Slingkhoder* at *Herdessen* is mentioned in a 1410 document: Since he was a serf of the *Landesherr*, he could have resided at what was later the Tappe farm.¹⁸⁴ The prosperous farmers in Hardissen and Lückhausen are nearly all recorded as *Schützen* (marksmen); interestingly, Lukebart is listed under 'Lage marksmen', even though from early modern times on, Hardissen marksmen, as far as we know, did not belong to the Lage *Schützengilde* (marksmen's guild). Traditionally, with the exception of the Flecken residents, only Windmeyer near Lage and Meyer at Ottenhausen were admitted as honorary members.

On June 24, 1951, a celebration was held to induct Karl Bökhaus as yet another honorary member [of the Lage *Schützengilde*]. And, in good fun, there was a



Fig. 106 Festive induction of Karl Bökhaus into the Schützengilde (Marksmen's Guild) Lage, 1951.

procession just like in the olden days, and Bökhaus was presented with a barrel of beer for settling the ‘border disputes’ - an allusion to the legal case centuries ago.¹⁸⁵

As mentioned earlier, in the Late Middle Ages, the village may well have observed judicial and governance rights – there is just no record of it. Sixteenth-century, and later, sources show a firmly entrenched *Landesherr* in the country. No *Bauerschaft* was given independent rights, and the *Bauerrichter* did the bidding of the Count, and was not a precursor to the office of mayor, even if in cases that were not clear-cut, the *Bauerrichter* might have felt more duty bound to the village than the sovereign. The elected “Vorsteher” (governor) from the late 18th century on was essentially serving the ruling class, and the first recorded governors from Hardissen were the *Kolone Feger* (1780, 1784/85), and Brinkmeyer and Lukebart (both, 1793/94).¹⁸⁶

However, the prerequisites for a participatory *Gemeinde* life were not there until the first half of the 19th century, which saw the liberation of farmers in 1808/09 and the subsequent agrarian, constitutional, and administrative reforms. Around 1800 there was neither occupation nor revolution in the State of Lippe, because Lippe could keep its independence under terms of the Princess Pauline’s regency. Despite that, those were unsettled times. The German *Länder* (*Land*, pl.) first waged a campaign against France, which was in the throes of revolt, but did not take part in any of the various wars between the coalitions.

That, however, was just the calm before the storm. Prussian soldiers were quartered in Lippe and, understandably, the populace had mixed emotions about that. One incident in Lückhausen back then triggered diplomatic repercussions. On November 13, 1797,

the Prussian Lieutenant Szymborski, being housed at the Niedermeyer farm in Lückhausen, wanted to go riding across the fields and not on the road that the rain had caused to be in bad shape. When Niedermeyer stopped him from doing that, an argument ensued, and there are contradictory versions as to what happened. According to the Lieutenant, he saw his host coming at him ‘with a pitchfork in his hands’, and ten of his hired hands likewise ‘armed’. The Lieutenant’s version had Niedermeyer planting himself in front of the horse; he ‘yelled defiantly that if I were to try to ride, he would show me the right road, all right.’ But according to the hired hands’ accounts, and Niedermeyer’s own, Niedermeyer had behaved totally calmly and with restraint. Not until the Lieutenant had called him names like ‘coarse, dumb farmer’, ‘ass’, and ‘coarse beast’, and threatened to stab him to death like he would a dog, did Niedermeyer matter-of-factly respond with: ‘I am not coarse, you are coarse!’ They also said they had not threatened the officer, but were just there to grub out some roots and just happened to have pitchforks in their hands ...

As the Lieutenant put it in a letter to the Prussian Prince, Louis Ferdinand, he felt that, as commander of his regiment, this incident ‘had greatly damaged his honor.’ Louis Ferdinand then immediately dispatched a squad of 12 men to the farm, to take the culprit prisoner. The only thing that saved Niedermeyer from arrest was fate. For a week, he was at large, and then, for his own safety, he turned himself in to the Lippe judicial authorities. Prince Leopold, speaking for himself and not Lippe, promised he would not turn him over to the Prussians. In quite a moving way, the sovereign stood up for his subject and personally wrote several letters to Louis Ferdinand and the Duke of Braunschweig, from whom the commander had asked for support.

The matter dragged on for weeks. The Lippe authorities did everything they could to make Niedermeyer's incarceration comfortable, but after nearly two months, he 'yearned to go back to his household.' Since the Prussian troops had fortuitously left by then, he could be released without having to worry about his safety.¹⁸⁷ Louis Ferdinand was killed in action near Saalfeld in 1806.

There is more in the records about this same Niedermeyer some years later. Soldiers were also being recruited from the Hardissen *Bauerschaft*; they were supposed to fight in Napoleon's military campaigns. Niedermeyer also faced this problem, but because he was well-to-do, he could pay for a substitute so his own 21-year-old son, Friedrich Christoph, could avoid going [to war]. The first candidate, one Phillip Ram of Blomberg, was not acceptable by the government, though, because he 'needed to have healthy feet' ('which the medical exam called for by Council Focke showed was not the case'). Two days later, on August 30, 1813, Niedermeyer stated that his son 'could not be spared, partly because of his extensive family, and partly because he did not want to be in the military,' and so named another person to take his son's place. This person would receive 600 Reich Talers and was to serve out the entire military obligation for the son. Niedermeyer's son got lucky: Seven weeks later, the bloody Leipzig *Völkerschlacht* (Battle of the Nations) took place, and he was able to stay home in Lückhausen, where he remained until his death in 1868 at the age of 76. The fate of the person who went in his place is not known. Also, another of Niedermeyer's sons, Ernst Friedrich, born in 1788 and later heir to the farm, was declared unfit for service in the *Landwehرداری* [Lippe *Land* militia], at the beginning of 1814. Pastor Stivarius, then Lieme's pastor, certified that, during re-

ligious instruction, Ernst Friedrich had had 'a very hard time with speech, and only with great effort could he answer questions put to him, often taking almost a minute for him to utter a single word.'¹⁸⁸

The year 1841 was particularly important in the development of governance maturation, also for the *Gemeinden* in Lippe. This was when the *Bauerschaft* got a modern *Gemeinde* constitution, at least by the standards of the time and place. It set down rights and duties of self-government. In the *Dorfversammlung* (village assembly), only *Kolone* (males who possessed farms) were allowed to vote and to choose one or more leaders or spokesmen who would also represent the *Gemeinde* in the new *Amt*-level Council of the *Gemeinden* in Lage.

Hardissen had belonged to the Lage *Amt* since 1807 when the *Amt* came into existence from merging the *Vogtei* of Lage with that of Heiden. The *Amt* office was first located in Detmold, and only moved to Lage in 1823, as a result of a successful petitioning for the move by residents. The voting rights system in the village assembly was changed in 1893 to the Prussian model of the three-class voting system for holding and electing office. The system clearly privileged the wealthier inhabitants, as each class got just as many representatives in the *Gemeinde* committee as it had members. Be that as it may, the right to vote was now no longer tied to property, so even the (male) *Einlieger* could vote.

The *Gemeinde* constitution thus marked a huge step along the way from being the *Gemeinde* of farmers to being the *Gemeinde* of residents. Those who paid no taxes at all, though, still could not vote. Members of the *Gemeinde* committee of 1897 were: Friedrich Wächter No. 33 and Heinrich Ostmann No. 23, 3rd precinct; Heinrich Röhr No. 3 (top presiding

committee officer) and Ernst Bökhaus No. 2, 2nd precinct; Friedrich Feger No. 5 (2nd highest presiding committee officer) and Friedrich Niebuhr No. 6, 1st precinct. The announcements during this time were posted at the fire station and on the bulletin board in the Wächter Pub. The records up to 1918 show the Hardissen presiding officers were:¹⁸⁹

1845/46	Heinrich Röhr
1878	Friedrich Niebuhr
1893-97	Gustav Niedermeyer († 1899)
1900-01	Fritz Feger
1906-15	Heinrich Röhr

Not until 1919, after World War I and after getting rid of the monarchy, did the provisional local constitution give all male residents, and for the first time, female residents over 20 years of age basically an equal right to vote. Hardissen's agricultural upper class now no longer elected the presiding officer, although this class did continue to be well-represented on the *Gemeinde* committee. On February of 1919, individual candidates were not running for election. Instead, there were two lists/tickets ("Prante" and "Voß"), appropriate farmers [*Landwirte*] and others belonged to one of them. The master brickmaker, Friedrich Prante of No. 41 was elected presiding officer, an office he held until 1924 when *Landwirt* Heinrich Röhr No. 3 replaced him. From 1933-1945, evidently *Landwirt* Albrecht Tappe No. 11 held the office of mayor.¹⁹⁰

Between the wars [= 1918-1939], the rural *Gemeinden* continued to get on a more even footing with the cities, among other things, through the 1927/28 law. After separation of the judicial and the administrative areas in 1879, Hardissen was part of the Detmold administrative office (beginning in 1928, the *Landrats-*

amt = parliament office), that in 1932 was incorporated into the newly formed Detmold Kreis (district). From the German Municipal Code of January 30, 1935 on, the *Vorsteher* (presiding officer) became known as the "Bürgermeister" (mayor), and the *Gemeindeausschuß* (*Gemeinde* committee) known as the *Gemeinderat* (*Gemeinde* council).¹⁹¹

In the 1920s, Hardissen's citizens were split into those who favored the New 'Weimar' Republic and those opponents of it who remained loyal to the concepts of monarchism and conservatism. Unrest threatened here, too. When in August of 1922, the rumor spread in Lage that on Bökhaus' farm workers were being beaten, workers from the town formed a demonstration procession and marched to the farm. Karl Bökhaus and his farm manager were beaten up by the angry crowd. The following summer, the political situation in Germany became increasingly tense. A sensational legal case was argued in front of the *Schwurgericht* (jury court) in Detmold. Thirty-six people stood accused of *Landfriedensbruch* (disturbance of the public peace); a few of them faced additional charges of intimidation and assault. Sixty-one witnesses were called, who had to watch what they said because occasionally a few witnesses had become defendants. The trial was in part about political arguments, for instance, when one lawyer explained that the Bökhaus farm was 'out of touch with the culture that ruled in Lage' and drew parallels to the worker protests directed against the Kapp *Putsch* (armed revolt) and the murder of *Reichsminister* Rathenau. The highest level public prosecutor on the other hand tried to set a calmer tone, and to some extent the verdict was somewhat conciliatory. The judges cleared all defendants of the charge of violent disturbance of the peace, and only a few mild jail sentences were imposed.¹⁹² One

Hardissen presiding officers and mayors before 1945



Fig. 107 Heinrich Röhr (1869-1939).



Fig. 108: Friedrich Prante (1863-1954).



Fig. 109 Albrecht Tappe (1898-1975).

attorney was also sentenced, paying a fine of 100,000 Marks, which was not nearly as hefty as it sounds to us today. This was because the troubled years between the wars reached their high point in 1923, and the fast spread of the currency devaluation was only the most visible sign. In just a few weeks after its imposition, the fine would have been easy to pay.

Following a few better years, the global economic crisis again created a tension-filled situation, beginning in the autumn of 1929. In Hardissen, too, political opinion was becoming radicalized, and the village witnessed a deep split in many of the village's views.¹⁹³ In the January 1929 *Landtag* election, the SPD (Social Democratic Party of Germany) and the DNVP (German National People's Party) with 82 and 59 votes, respectively, still remained the strongest parties

– one, republican (= favoring a republic), and one, monarchist (= favoring a return to a monarch), with a vote percentage of 39% and 28%, respectively. Four years later, in January of 1933, the voter attitudes on both sides had radicalized. The NSDAP [National Socialist German Workers' Party] was now slightly ahead, even ahead of the SPD, and the 23 votes the KPD [Communist Party of Germany] got was a clear increase for the extreme Left.

Interestingly, in Hardissen the National Socialists had won only a total of seven votes, in contrast to the *Reichstag* vote of three months earlier, even though the Nazi party had run an extravagant *Landtag* election campaign in Lippe, and after some initial set backs gained enough of a victory to have some propaganda value (Hitler had spoken in Lage on January 9th). In

Hardissen, though, the proportion of votes for the Social Democrat *Land* President Drake increased, but did so by drawing votes away from the *Deutschnationalen* (German Nationals). The middle-class center, with which the brickmaker Hermann Siek had aligned himself in the 1920s, had almost completely lost its regular voters, and it had always been a small number anyway.¹⁹⁴

During the ‘Third Reich’, *Gemeinden* had no voice at all. Their political representation had been ‘brought into alignment with the NS-regime’ after the results of the *Reichstag* election of March 5, 1933 (the Communist Party had been excluded), made to tow the line, and rendered powerless.

Agricultural co-ops were likewise dissolved and in September, 1933, forcibly unified into one *Reichsnährstand* (Reich’s nutrition order). Although the *Lippe Hauptgenossenschaft*, LHG; main cooperative) was allowed to exist, the dissolution of other organizations affected not only the *Hauptverein* (main association), rich in tradition, but also the private self-help organizations like the Lieme *Landwirtschaftlicher Verein* (agricultural association), which Wilhelm Obermeier had co-founded in Lückhausen in 1924. He had served as the Board’s director for many years. In place of associations with members having equal rights, the ‘Führer principle’ was now introduced into these agricultural organizations.

Hardissen even produced the “Kreisbauernführer” (‘leader of the district’s farmers’) for all of Lippe (Alwin Niebuhr of No. 6), to whom each *Gemeinde*’s ‘village-level *Bauernführer*’ was subordinate. However, not everyone approved of this system. In 1933/34, acting as a devout Christian, Wilhelm Obermeier in Lückhausen was a participant in the opposition to *Gleichschaltung* (bringing into alignment with Na-



Fig. 109a: Directing and controlling the economy was part of the duties of Niebuhr, the Kreisbauernführer [leader of all farmers in Lippe].

zism) of the Lieme congregation, and was regarded by Pastor Hossius as ‘the most reliable (of all the church board directors).’¹⁹⁵ Still others had economic reasons for their ignoring of the new ideological restrictions. In doing that, they brought suspicion upon themselves, as, e.g., happened with Heinrich Held, who was still doing business in 1935 with the Jewish livestock dealer, Katz, and because of that, the Party saw to it in

1936 that he lost his membership in the *Reichskriegerbund* (Kyffhäuserbund; Imperial War Union), in which he had previously been the camaraderie director of its Lage branch.

Gauging who was pro-Nazi Party and who anti-Nazi Party in Hardissen is hard to do with any degree of certainty. What comes closest to being known with some certitude is the degree of political organization, in view of the membership in the NSDAP. Here in this village there were just a few high-level Nazi Party activists, with a relatively small number of members.

The military [base] commander from Hörstmar, whose jurisdiction included the Hardissen *Gemeinde*, reported in March of 1935 that in Hardissen there were only five ‘Party members’ out of 400 residents (by comparison, Hörstmar had 17 Party members out of 710 residents), so, proportionate to the population, nearly twice as many. In Hörstmar, there were 34 people being inducted into the Nazi Party, but in Hardissen, there was only one who was considered ‘worthy’ of membership.¹⁹⁶ Unfortunately, the Nazi regime succeeded quite quickly in establishing itself and was able to get diffuse support from many people who had at first hesitated or, in certain subgroups, had been anti-Nazi. This success was due to the Nazi agenda, that seemingly offered something to almost everyone – there was general support for a forceful revision of the terms of the Versailles Treaty, and the goal of a “*Volks-gemeinschaft*” (‘people’s union’) mostly struck a chord with people. There was fundamentally no opposition to the fact that Germans, right from the start, whether on the basis of supposedly racial grounds or on political orientation, were being ostracized and were not allowed into this “*Volks-gemeinschaft*”. The mostly willing cooperation of officials in public administration and the schools went a step beyond. New

Nazi organizations like the “*Reichsnährstand*” (Imperial nutrition order), the “*Deutsche Arbeitsfront*” (German Work Front), and the “*Hitlerjugend*” (Hitler Youth) soon filled out the national indoctrination spectrum. Gaining in strength, and not only by force and terror, this system held together until the bitter end.

Some long-term development was allowed to go forward during the Nazi regime. Industrialization and urbanization continued to make strides. In Hardissen, the number of residents decreased, as workers headed to the cities to find employment. The Nazi system did not substantially alter the financial privilege for agriculture and debt-relief programs for farmers that were in bad shape financially, nor did the ideological upgrading of legislation concerning the “*Reichsnährstand*” and the “*Erbhof*” (ancestral farm). The farming operations that now took on the “*Erbhof*” roles were protected from being divided up and from being sold, but farmers were also restricted in the way they conducted their farming operations. At the beginning of the war, earlier propaganda had focused on the archaic values of ‘blood (ancestry) and soil’, but that was completely overshadowed by the [wartime] no-holding-back acceleration of industrial production. In the rural areas, the ‘production battle [front]’ had, however, resulted in worsening conditions, because the German *Wehrmacht* [military] confiscated the horses, and there was often not enough fertilizer or mechanical equipment to meet the need. Forced labor of prisoners-of-war was used to ease the shortage of farm workers, as for example on the Röhr farm where a few Yugoslavian nationals were housed in the barn. By spring of 1939, several Hardissen – and surrounding Lieme-area farmers – had erected a private camp that survived for many decades; the farmers used prisoners for doing agricultural work.

The increasingly short supply of products was the reason for compulsory rationing of products right from the outset of the war, but only food rationing cards were given out.¹⁹⁷ The war-time economy led to a strange undertaking on the cemetery grounds. Around the monument to soldiers killed in action during World War I, a large, empty space had been left so the cemetery could be expanded at some future time. Now, with school children helping out, mulberry trees were planted there, as a food source for silk caterpillars, so the caterpillars would then make silk to be used to make umbrellas.

For Hardissen, the war ended on April 1, 1945. A woman, then 16 years old, recalls it this way: “On the morning of April 1st, we saw a youth running down one of the streets, yelling: ‘They’re here! Tanks are already on the main highway.’ All the people in the neighboring houses ran up the grass-covered slope, on which the farmstead across from us [Brinkmeyer’s] stood. From there, you could see the highway that ran from Lage to Lemgo... Behind the bare fields, in the light morning mist, you could see the powerful vehicles lined up one after the other, majestically rolling down the gray strip of highway, for as far as you could see – and nobody was stopping them! Then, the “Bäuerin” [Frau Brinkmeyer] came out of the farmhouse carrying a white bed sheet in her arms, walked resolutely across the yard to the flag pole on the side of the house entrance, and slowly raised the bed sheet. The inhabitants from the other nearby houses stared at her in amazement. Still tacked onto the trees, were signs by Party leaders stating that ‘the raising of white flags will be branded a treasonous act against the fatherland and doing so would risk being condemned to death.’ Contrary to the propaganda, it unexpectedly turned out that: ‘the war was over – and we did not want to die,

but to keep on living.’¹⁹⁸

After the many years of *Gemeinde* governance with no power, the post-war years saw many, many duties given to the *Gemeinde*. The pompously announced General Clause that had been in the German *Gemeinde* Decree of 1935, whereby the *Gemeinden* basically were responsible for all assignments within their district, now meant a flood of work.¹⁹⁹ On February 2, 1946, the *Gemeinde* Council met for the first time since it was dissolved, with 11 out of 12 members assembling in the home of Ernst Heuer, whom the British occupation force had appointed Mayor. Heuer had doubtlessly been appointed because he had been an SPD member since 1929, and had opposed the Nazi regime. The Council unanimously accepted the new *Gemeinde* constitution, and right away filled these six committees: Finance, Public Assistance, Cemetery, Housing, Roads, and School. Evacuees and refugees had been working on garden land on the Hardissen moor, and a temporary housing shelter was planned.

It is not surprising then that Heuer, unanimously elected again that autumn, was overburdened. Therefore, that following May, Horst Wankell was hired to assist Heuer with administrative duties, but then had to be let go by summer of 1948 because of the difficult financial situation. Also postponed during this time was *Gemeinde* participation in the construction of a water supply, which had just been discussed. The *Gemeinde* election of October, 1948, resulted in two seats for the CDU ticket (Bökhaus and Fischer) and two for the SPD (Heuer and Voß).

At first, there was no agreement on a mayor: Several votes were taken that resulted in the same 2-2 split, and the CDU contenders indicated they did not want the decision made by tossing for it. Not until January,

1949, was a decision made that Ernst Heuer would be mayor for two years, and then Karl Bökhaus would take over the office. This is what actually happened: at the end of the year, six months after the founding of the *Bundesrepublik* in May, one of the councilmen coming in on the SPD ticket – by way of repaying a private favor – finally cast a vote for Bökhaus, and possibly playing a role here were political reservations about the quite ‘Left’-leaning Heuer.

In 1952, the *Gemeinde* Council was increased to 11 members. There were still more committee posts to fill, in which the only woman member, Frau Tornier served on two committees, one for Public Assistance, the other, Refugees. 1956 saw a reduction in the number of committees to five; in 1961, the number sank to two (the Accounts Committee and the Tax Committee), and there were now only seven council members. The situation had normalized enough that, instead of broader sharing of responsibilities, it was now mainly a question of needing professional administrative action. This led to lay council members now seeking help from experts. Between 1950 and 1964, Wilhelm Bente, Lage’s municipal retirement matters administrator, assisted mainly with drawing up budgets, and did so, at first, without receiving pay.

After Bente retired from his Lage position, he still came to the *Gemeinde* office every day, and also took administrative assignments home to complete. There was that much work to do in the *Gemeinde*, which was continuing to grow. Thus, it was only right, and inexpensive, that starting in January, 1963, Bente at least got a small monthly stipend of 250 Marks.

Finding housing for refugees in the post-war years

GEMEINDEWAHL			
Stimmzettel			
für die Wahl der Vertretung der Gemeinde			
HARDISSEN			
am 26. Oktober 1956.			
Nicht mehr als sechs Bewerber abkreuzen. Abkreuzen von mehr als sechs Bewerbern macht den Stimmzettel ungültig.			
			Der Stimmzettel ist in dieser Spalte anzuhängen.
1	Albrecht Wilf Albrecht, Hardissen 3 Trennfaktor	CDU	(146)
2	Bökhaus Karl Bökhaus, Hardissen 3 Bauer	CDU	(203)
3	Tosche August Tosche, Hardissen 6 Bauer	CDU	(142)
4	Voss Gustav Voss, Hardissen 24 Zimmereisen	CDU	(150)
5	Wemuth Alfred Wemuth, Hardissen 2 k.u.m. Angestellter	CDU	(135)
6	Wibrecht Hermann Wibrecht, Hardissen 19 Zimmereisen	CDU 924	(148)
7	Heuer Ernst Heuer, Hardissen 30 Gehwirt	SPD	(127)
8	Kulmann Karl Kulmann, Hardissen 40 Tischler	SPD	(120)
9	Lambke Bruno Lambke, Hardissen 9 Gießereiarbeiter	SPD	(117)
10	Merran Otto Merran, Hardissen 3 Maschinen-Arbeiter	SPD	(144)
11	Vogt Rudolf Vogt, Hardissen 27 Tischler	SPD	(121)
12	Watermann Werner Watermann, Hardissen 46 Tischler	SPD	(110)

Fig. 109b Voting sheet of the Gemeinde election of 1956.

Colorpl. 13 Gaststätte Heidekrug.



Colorpl. 14 Gaststätte Berg and a view of the athletic field.





Colorpl. 15 Herbergstraße in the area of the spa, "Fegers Busch".

Colorpl. 16 Klaus-Groth-Weg: the street that connects Hardissen proper with the Lage-Maßbruch.



Colorpl. 17 The Hardissen athletic field with a view of the new development area on Hudeweg.



Colorpl. 18 Fontanestraße with houses built in the 1960s.

Colorpl. 19 Newly constructed dwelling places on the Hudeweg.



Colorpl. 20 Hölderlinstraße. In the background, the future site of the Grundschule.

was a huge problem. Every available space had to be used, and this caused real economizing on space for all involved. If for no other reason, this made it a thankless job that Mayor Heuer had, because he had to assign the refugees to village households. Families were housed in out buildings and even in farrowing houses, and that meant that the water supply and the sanitary system were no longer adequate for such overcrowding. For example, the Bam farm had been assigned so many people that in the early 1950s yet, the family had to buy back their own bedroom, so-to-speak, and had to get other living space.²⁰⁰ By assisting with agricultural work, the refugee families earned a little money, or were paid with produce worth something.

A central assignment of the *Gemeinde* was now to

get land ready for housing development. In January 1, 1949, a start was made, when the *Gemeinde* purchased a 2-hectare field from the Kempkes farm No. 3, planted in dill. That land they used to start a series of trades that ended with a tract suitable for construction located on firm roads.

One year later, the decision was made to trade the old cemetery on Fischer No. 13 for a building development tract, and three more construction sites were approved. Proceeds from the Tasche farmland now enabled building out toward Lückhauser Straße. Besides all this, the *Gemeinde* got in touch with two development associations and filled out applications for water supply grants. In the summer of 1950, new street sections in the development were named: Lück-

The Hardissen mayors during the post-war period



Fig. 110 Ernst Heuer, Mayor, 1945-1949.



Fig. 111 Karl Bökhaus, Mayor, 1950-1964.



Fig. 112 Heinrich Helle, Mayor, 1964-1969.



Fig. 113 The newly developed “Hardisser Heide” [Hardissen moor] in the early 1960s.

hauser Weg, Heideweg (later, Hudeweg), and Herbergweg. The area was subsequently provided with a water supply simultaneously with construction completion. The water supply was jointly financed by the residents and the *Gemeinde*. As a result of the April 1953 agreement with the neighboring Hörstmar *Gemeinde* for making the river less polluted, the Council pursued the goal of making available new land for development near the existing water supply. And then they also had to push through the sewage system, and that was because in February, 1956, the office of water supply and distribution in Detmold demanded the setting up of a sewage system with a central purification system, to be in place when the land was opened for development. This was done to prevent polluting the Oetternbach. The Council found out that

summer (1950), that the complete system would mean an expense outlay of 156,000 Marks, which, according to the *Gemeinde* minutes, ‘caused the council members to all shake their heads.’ They decided to write a non-committal letter to Detmold, noting that the sewer system would be expanded in the next couple of years, and would keep pace with the housing development. And they kept right on with the construction. In 1955, the *Landesverband* (Land Committee) purchased from the Brinkmeyer farm a large tract of land on the moor, where soon many homes went up. During 1960-1962, the school athletic field was relocated to this area and improved, and its old location (later, “Obere Straße”) was opened up for development, too. The Council turned down, on numerous occasions, applications to put up an apartment building with

several floors, citing the ‘[unobstructed] view of the countryside.’ But the building of smaller homes progressed nonstop, with the next phases being homes along “Afrikaweg” or “Schulweg”, “Mittelstraße” and “Spricker Weg”.

In autumn of 1964, Karl Bökhaus decided to bring to an end his many years of service as Mayor. It had been a stroke of luck for Hardissen that this man, who was entrusted with numerous volunteer positions and had the gift of leadership, also served his homevillage. After Bökhaus took office at the beginning of 1950, he, a founding member of the CDU in the Detmold district, very soon gained the trust of all the Hardissen council members. By October, he had been elected with no opposition, and the following year all six members voted for him: The temporary increase of the *Gemeinde* council to 11 members, in accordance with the municipal vote of 1952, produced a crucial vote for the position of mayor, which narrowly chose Bökhaus, who got six votes to Heuer’s five. Of course, there were differences of opinion in individual council decision-making, but the mayor was quite frequently skilled at getting his agenda through. Nor did he get opposition from his administrator, Schulz, or from his long-time friend, Tasche... In a special public session of the Council held on December 20, 1963, the mayor expressed his gratitude, especially ‘to all those who had helped handle the often difficult work, and for what he particularly valued, the harmonious atmosphere that had always prevailed in the sessions.’

The *Gemeinde* minutes confirm this view of a successful endeavor, in which the Mayor and Council objectively and carefully accomplished much for their *Gemeinde*. And ‘on the side’, the Mayor managed what was still a sizeable farm, was for 28 years president of the *Lage Molkereigenossenschaft* (dairy coo-

perative) (that later became the *Lippische Milch Verwertung*; commercial dairy of Lippe), and had decisive input in the foundation and the promotion of the dairy industry. On top of that, Bökhaus, among other things, served as a member in the *Kreistag* [district-level] meeting, was a local farm owner, a long-time president of the *Lippe Verein zur Förderung der Landestierzucht* (Agricultural Livestock Breeders’ Association). And, too, he was president of the *Lopshorn Reiterverein* (riding club), and had been awarded countless honors for untiring devoted service. Karl Bökhaus died on July 28, 1966, at the age of 74.²⁰¹

In the *Kommunal* (municipal) election in autumn of 1964, the *Gemeinde* Council unanimously elected Heinrich Helle as the new mayor. The *Gemeinde* office was now relocated to Helle’s house – or, better said, for the first time ever, a separate room was set up as the council office, the ‘*Gemeinde* office’ having been up to then located in Mayor Bökhaus’ living room, and consisting in just a writing desk and a corner seating section. The new *Gemeinde* office employee, August Blank, had taken over from the commendable Wilhelm Bente in August, 1964. Blank later fondly recalled the very hospitable Bökhaus family, who had regularly asked him to join them for lunch or for coffee. The new office, though, offered a separate entrance, and a more central location, making it especially easier for elderly folks to get to it. In general, the new *Gemeinde* administration was to be run somewhat ‘more officially’ and professionally, as starting on January 1, 1965, Blank was employed full time for running the *Gemeinde* administration. In addition, he took over from Ernst Brüggemann, who had given long-time service, as taker of the Council minutes. He also became director of the public library, which up until then had

been in the charge of Teacher Pfaff.

The budget of the still expanding *Gemeinde* had been adjusted in 1962 to meet the new realities, and was raised quite considerably (from just barely 120,000 Marks to almost 350,000 Marks). This increase proved to be urgently needed because in the next few years, the *Gemeinde* had to foot the very high costs of further expanding the housing development. In autumn of 1965, the Council approved the expenditure plan for the first construction stage of the new water purification system and the sewage system. Under the plan, the expenses were to come to about 485,000 Marks, and towards this amount financial assistance from the *Land* of NRW in the amount of 320,000 Marks would be available – and all this, for the moment, without the Herberg Division, whose residents were being recommended to hook their homes into the Hagen drainage mains. The *Gemeinde* then had to borrow 80,000 Marks; and for the sewage system expansion, it borrowed an additional 260,000 Marks, as per a Council decision in spring of 1968.

Since after the 1950s, garbage had only been collected every two weeks, all of Hardissen, with the exception of the Bökhaus and Bam farms, decided to join the Lage municipal sanitation service; the old *Schuttkuhle* (dump) behind Held's farm disappeared.

The *Gemeinde*'s last plans and decisions came at the end of 1969, and concerned connecting even the old part of the village to the sewage system main. Clearly, they wanted to entrust that project to the city of Lage. And, as a matter of fact, the important and costly expansion of the new housing had caused the old village core to be quite neglected. At the end, the *Gemeinde* Council had an impressive balance to show for the development of the old 'Hardissen moor', with 13 new streets being named during 1966-1969. The modern spread-out residential area, though, stood in contrast to the villages of Hardissen and Lückhausen, where much remained the way it used to be, and the farm houses, then as now, characterize the village's appearance.



***From the History of
Transportation in Hardissen***

Fig. 114 Open carriage at the Brinkmeyer farm, about 1925.

Fig. 115 The Brinkmeyer family out for a ride in the Landau [coach style, top goes up or down] in the Teuto-burg Forest, about 1930.





Fig. 116 Karl Fischer's motorbike license, 1927.

Fig. 117 Karl Fischer and companion traveling by motorbike.





Fig. 118 Wilhelm Reese and his wife in a Cabrio (convertible), c. 1938.

Fig. 120 Motorized vehicles are making strides: The Brink family in the early 1960s.



Fig. 119 Edith Rieke and girl friend going by moped, c. 1955.

VIII. Club Life and Future Prospects

Clubs only gradually gained solid ground in Hardissen, with its agricultural character. Apart from the Fire Department, that had a tradition, the club tradition only went back to the post-war years.²⁰²

The *Sportverein TuS* (Gymnastics and Sports Club) of Hardissen was founded on February 12, 1950 in the *Heidekrug*. It was started because there were a lot of adolescents in Hardissen and on the Maßbruch who really wanted to engage in sports, and besides, Mayor Heuer had opened a *Lokal* (pub) in 1949, and for that reason, was interested in starting up a club. Heuer then made available a place in his *Saal* (large room; hall) for the exercise routine lessons and the table-tennis games. The primary initiators of anything to do with sports were Otto Merrem and

Hermann Ballach. Ballach and Erich Mieß took part as coach and sports manager, respectively. In the difficult post-war years, the Club assigned itself the task, as per the regulations for setting up and running clubs, of ‘furthering the morale of the German people through clubs and cultural organizations.’ Two evenings a week there were exercise/gymnastics lessons, and in the summer also track and field and soccer team activities.

On June 25, 1950, an ‘athletic competition day’, showcasing the first fruits of the Club’s efforts, was held on Feger’s cow pasture: The day started with track and field competition, then came soccer games on the athletic field in Lieme, then about 1 PM, a processional started out at the Heuer *Lokal*, went through the village, and ended up back at Feger’s pasture, the

Turn- und Sportverein Hardissen

Zu Samstag, den 25. Juni 1950, laden wir alle Einwohner von Hardissen und Umgebung zum

Sportwerbetag

auf die von Herrn Feger zur Verfügung gestellte Weide ein. Der TuS. Hardissen 1950 will an diesem Tage allen Eltern und Sportliebhabern die Früchte seiner Bestreihung im Turnen und Sport noch heftigstigen Beweisen unter Beweis stellen. Gleichzeitig wollen wir alle noch Abenteurer für uns gewinnen, gleichzeitig, ob in aktiver oder passiver Mitarbeit. Wir wollen nicht nur ein Sportverein heißen, sondern die ganze Gemeinde muß eine Sportgemeinschaft werden.

Am 25. Juni 1950 muß Alt und Jung sich auf der Sportweide treffen. Der Sportwart

Programm des TuS Hardissen am Sonntag, dem 25. Juni 1950

8:00 Uhr: Leichtathletische Wettbewerbe der Männer, Frauen, Schüler und Schülerinnen

Sportplatz Lieme

Fußballspiel

8:30 Uhr: Schülerwettkampf gegen Schülermannschaft Lieme

9:15 Uhr: H. Meuschel gegen F. Meuschel SE. Hege

10:15 Uhr: Spiel der 1. Mannschaft gegen die 2. Mannschaft des TuS. Lieme

Festliches Hoffest

11:00 Uhr: Festmarsch von der Getreidehölle Huesel des TuS über zur Sportweide

Kampfbahn - Sportfeld

Nachmittag der Schüler und Schülerinnen

Eröffnungen aller Sportler

Gemeinschaft der Frauen und Mädchen

Bildung der Männer und Frauen

Beschreibung der Nachmittags-Lage

Bewertungen der Schüler und Schülerinnen

Vollendung unserer Bewegung

Kerkerbewerbe der Frauen und Mädchen

Kerkerbewerbe der Männer

Kerkerbewerbe der Jungen und Mädchen

Bewertungen (Männer und Frauen der Nachmittags-Lage)

Beschreibung der Frauen und Mädchen

Beschreibungen der Nachmittags-Lage

Schluß: Begrüßung, Lied der Frauen und Mädchen

Zur Bekämpfung der Unkraut werden im Erweichung (200 DM, Kinder 50 DM und Familienkarten 100 DM) erhoben.

Fig. 121 [Schedule of the TuS Hardissen’s athletic competition day on Sunday, June 25, 1950].



Fig. 122 The gymnastics squad with Hermann Ballach, at Feger's meadow, 1950.

festival site. There, there were then exercise routines and gymnastics demonstrated by men, women, and children. Exercising songs were sung, like: "Wahre Freundschaft soll nicht wanken" (True friendship shall never falter) and "Turner, auf zum Streite" (Gymnasts, to the competition!). In this first year alone, 130 people became members. Unfortunately, all the high hopes kept getting dashed, so then crises sessions had to take place to address issues of camaraderie and attendance at exercise classes. There was a lot of displeasure registered, especially with coach Droste's soccer team – and that should have been no surprise, because the issue of their own playing field was a perennial problem. This is why: the soccer players had to rely on the good will of those farmers who let them play on their fields, and in the players' opinion, Mayor Bökhaus was only half-heartedly on their side. *Lokal* owner and Councilman, Heuer, mediated, and in 1951, the *Regierungs* President Drake even took part in one of the *Gemeinde* Council sessions on this topic,

but his short visit ('for a half hour') did not have much effect. After every harvest, the Club got to use a mowed field strip and put up their goal gates there – so not the most ideal conditions. And one day, in 1952, field owner Bökhaus plowed the field stubble back under: 'the goal gates were left standing there all alone.' Other attempts, getting the use of a field on Feger's land, and one on Afrika Straße, were short-lived. One of the fields had to quit being used when the soccer ball 'danced overhead on the power line, sparks flying.' These difficulties made the suggestion by the Hagen S[port] V[erein] that the two clubs should merge, a very attractive one. Hagen did have a nice, new soccer field.

On July 10, 1953, the meeting to found the Sportvereinigung [i.e., Spielvereinigung] (sports association) Hagen-Hardissen was held, and over the next few



Fig. 123 Hardissen's soccer team, around 1950, among those included are Erich Mieß, Otto Merrem, Otto Kälble, Leopold Winter, Walter Diemert, and Jupp Schulz.



Fig. 124 The Hagen-Hardissen soccer team in the 1950s: W. Konrad, E. Motzygamba, H. Rosemeier, K. Schröder, H. Pook, H. Biker, G. Heil, G. Schäfer, F. Busch, Lessmeier, H. Schröder.

Fig. 125 The table tennis division of the SpVg [= Spielvereinigung] Hagen-Hardissen at the Brake final round of competition, 1955: [standing:] Irmgard Strauß, Herbert Rose, Heinz Stiller, Martha Plauermann, Elli Bohle, Harri Krössin, Liselotte Baureis, Erich Mieß; in front: Rainer Hangstein, Elfriede Kulemann.





Fig. 126 At the table tennis tournament in Bielefeld, 1959: Ilona Plaumann; Gudrun and Elli Bohle.

years, a lively consolidated club life ensued. Hermann Ballach started out as vice-president and later was president, and as the ‘gymnastics director’, continued to coach his teams. The founder of the Hardissen club, Otto Merrem, continued to be involved in the new association as its secretary and manager for a few more years. Among other things, he saw to it the association had good relations with the press. The *Kahlenberg* restaurant in Hagen now became the Club’s meeting place. It was here, too, that they became friends with a club from Essen that in the late 1950s even arranged for an ‘awesome’ Carnival session.

The meeting room was getting too small for the increasing number of female participants in exercise routines, so in 1968, a separate Hardissen group, led by Henni Wind, conducted weekly exercise classes using

private gym equipment at Heuer’s *Lokal*. In addition to the gymnastics groups and the soccer teams, a table tennis division had started up in 1951, and has been an important, and winning, branch of the Club since then. The table tennis players remained at Hardissen’s pub/inn, the *Heidekrug*, right up until the *Gemeinde* consolidation with Lage, which then enabled them to use the Lage gymnasium.

Serving as presidents of the *Spielvereinigung* since 1953 were:²⁰³

1953-54	Ernst Heil
1955-57	Hermann Ballach
1957-62	Fritz Venghaus
1962-66	Theodor Beulen
1966-69	Erich Gabriel
1969-76	Paul Schäfer
1976-86	Bernhard Erz
1987-93	Rolf Kamphausen
1993-present	Annelie Gabriel

The group of women, mentioned previously, transferred to a new gym located at the *Sonderschule* (special school), after it was built in Hagen. But when they ran into some difficulties there, e.g., the gym hours in Lage were always in short supply, they wanted to move to the *Realschule*’s new building, but priority there was given to new clubs. So, they decided they would found a new association. In 1972, they broke from the Hagen-Hardissen *Spielvereinigung*, and on January 11th, met at Heuer’s *Lokal* and formed the Lage-Hardissen FSG, the *Familien sportgemeinschaft* (family sports association). Some 20 women, and Hermann Ballach as the children’s exercise coach, joined the new club. They couldn’t extend membership to adolescents because there was nobody available to be a trainer for that age group.



Fig. 127 What the SpVg Hagen-Hardissen had grown into, 1995.

The first president was the director/coach they had had all along, Henni Wind. The FSG is still quite active today. However, the children's gymnastics team, which always had good attendance, had to be disbanded when the increasing number of AGs [= Arbeitsgruppen – study groups] were booking the gym and the main school finally became a full-day school. The available gym hours just started too late. But this loss [in membership] was offset by a big growth in the number of women who joined the club. This success is

surely due to the efforts of the long-time coach, Ingrid Billerbeck. In 1981, half the 80 members were children, but on the 25th anniversary, in 1997, there were 77 women in the club. Presidents of the FSG up to the present were:²⁰⁴

1972-78	Henni Wind
1978-80	Leni Stiller
1980-90	Erika Biere
1990-present	Bärbel Schwintzer



Fig. 128 The FSG [=Familiensportgemeinschaft] at the festival serpentine through the city of Lage, around 1980.

Fig. 129 Sports award and honoring the FSG, with chairman, Werner Dröge.





Fig. 130 Exercise routine evening of the FSG in the gymnasium on the Sedanplatz, 1995.

The SC [Sport Club] *Fortuna Lage* was mainly a soccer club, a registered/incorporated association (e.V. = eingetragener Verein) since 1969, whose beginnings were connected to the SuS Lage and the Catholic Sportjugend. Between 1986 and 1988, an athletic facility was built in Hardissen, sports and club celebrations were held, and everything to do with club life seemed fine. In 1987, though, the SC suffered its first set back, when a planned tennis component failed to be launched. The commitment to the project could not be sustained, and in 1990 the club was disbanded. Out of the 80 members, about half joined the Hagen-Hardissen *Spielvereinigung*, among them, the seniors' soccer team and the hobby soccer team. In the summers, both teams still use the Hardissen athletic field as an alternate playing field. Maybe in the future, if Hardissen's infrastructure is improved, more sports activities will take place here again.²⁰⁵

There are other organized sports events in the town besides the Hardissen clubs, and they deserve to be included here. Since 1950, the *Reiterverein* Lopshorn (riding club) has sponsored many horse races that are held in the Hardissen area, close to the Maßbruch. The owner of the land, the club's president, Bökhaus, and Landwirt Niebuhr, put in the race track, and together with Heumann from Hagen, promoted and organized the event. It was, as a newspaper article at the time put it, 'a truly exemplary design.' Eight-thousand or so enthusiastic spectators attended the races. In 1951, Karl-Ernst Bökhaus decided to compete, riding "Robert", in two races.²⁰⁶

Beginning in 1954, the *Motor-Sport-Club* (MSC) of Lage organized motorcycle races on the Mühlenbrinkwiese.

The first competitive race was held in Ehrentrup, and 13 more 'Land of Hermann – grass-track races'



Fig. 131 The first seniors' soccer team of the SC [Sport Club] Fortuna Lage, 1985.

were held in Hardissen. Karl Bökhaus, owner of the track grounds, also went on to become a promoter of this event, which soon even attracted international participants. If the weather was good, it was not unusual to have 15,000 spectators at the races. Starting in 1969, there was an annual moto cross *Geschicklichkeitsturnier* (maneuverability tournament), dubbed the 'Mühlenbrink-Trials'. After 1972, the grass-track racing no longer met the amended [racing] guidelines and was no longer sanctioned, and so many participants and spectators continued to go to Hardissen for this moto cross event. But 1989 saw its demise anyway, as the Mühlenbrink had for some time been identified as a nature preserve, and the environmental authorities announced that events on this stretch of land were from then on prohibited.²⁰⁷

Neither can we leave out the sport of the *Jagd* (the Hunt), as Hardissen has been a public hunt district sin-

ce 1936. Prior to that, hunting rights had been leased to hunting enthusiasts from Lage.²⁰⁸ In 1952, a Hardissen *Jagdgenossenschaft* (hunt association) was formed, with Walter Kempkes and Herrman Wiebusch managing it, with 618 hectares of land to be leased [by the group].²⁰⁹ On November 18, 1973, the "Lipperland-Meute" (hound pack) and the "Schleppjagdverein" (drag-hunt club; i.e., instead of hounds chasing live animals, they chase a scent that has been dragged around the hunt course before the hunt) were started. Founding members were Wolfgang and Eberhard Gorontzi from Osnabrück, Karl Dreckschmidt and Gerhard Kemminer from Bünde, Helmut Rottschäfer from Hardissen, Wilhelm König from Haltern as Hunt Master, and Karl-Ernst Bökhaus from Hardissen as club manager. Twenty-six fox-hounds of the Artland-Meute [pack] were purchased from Frau Mette of Osnabrück.²¹⁰

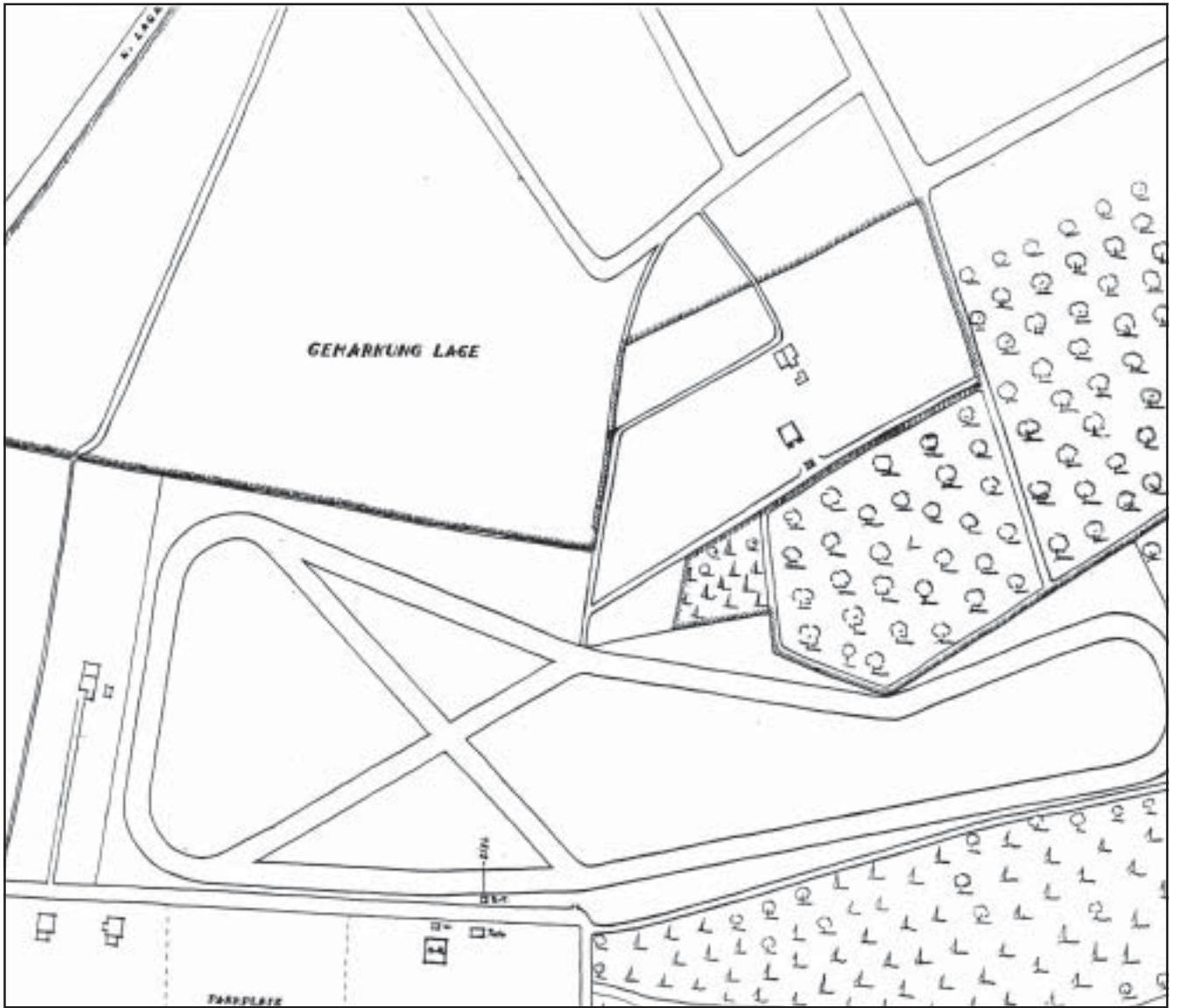


Fig. 132 The layout/scene of the horse-race track on Hardissen Moor where it meets the Maßbruch.



*Figs. 133-138 Photos from the Har-
dissen horse races in the early
1950s.*

Fig. 134





Fig. 135



Fig. 136

Fig. 137



Fig. 138

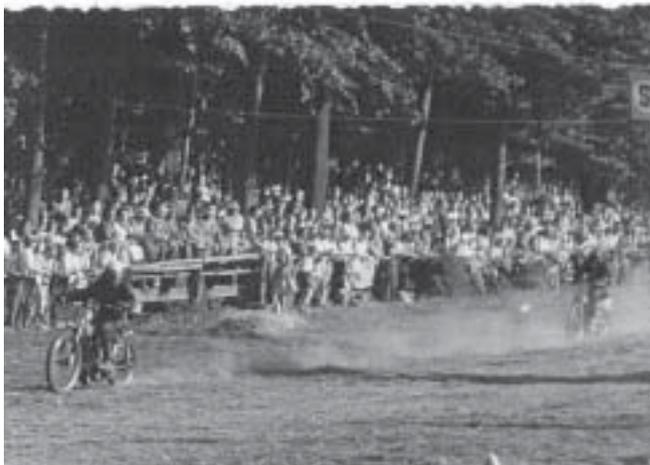


Fig. 139 Photo memories from the 6th Hermannsland-Grasbahnrennen (=motorcycle racing event on turf) on the Mühlenbrink, 1959.



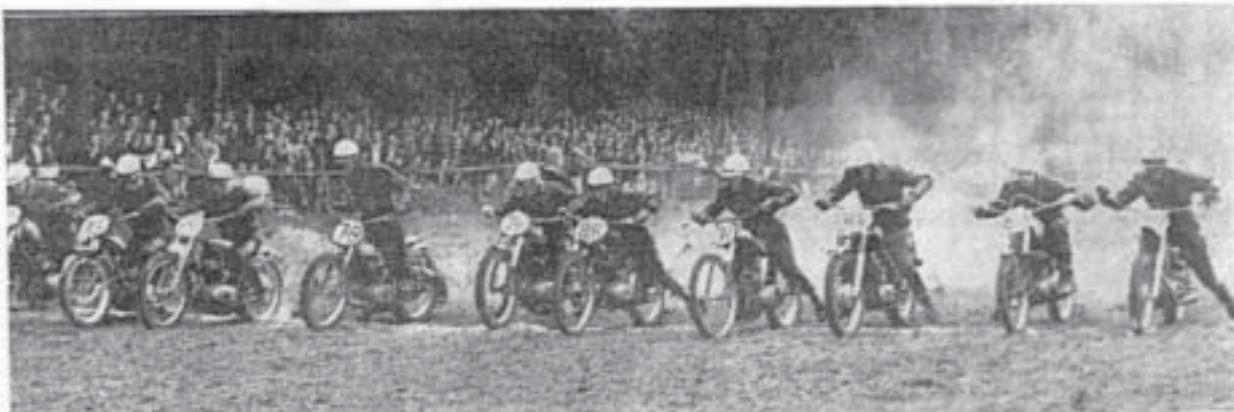
Fig. 140 Cover page from the 11th Grasbahnrennen, 1966.



Fig. 141 At the 3rd ADAC-Mühlenbrink-Trial, 1974.

Europas Grasbahn-Elite startet beim 12. Hermannsland-Grasbahnrennen 1968

MSC Lage verpflichtete Grasbahn-Asse aus England, Norwegen, Schweden, Dänemark und Holland



Hochauf wirbelt der Sand, wenn sich die Startflagge zum Internationalen „Hermannsland“-Grasbahnrennen des MSC Lage im Mühlenbrink senkt und der tollkühne Kampf der verwegenen Grasbahn-Asse um die Führung und um Zehntelsekunden beginnt.

(LZ-Sportbildarchiv)

Lage. Nach 21 Stunden, dann dröhnt wieder Motorsärm im Mühlenbrink, wo der MSC Lage im ADAC sein 12. Internationales „Hermannsland“-Grasbahnrennen auf dem idyllisch gelegenen Grasbahnkurs veranstaltet und wieder ein Klassefeld mit nationalen und internationalen Meistern des Bahnrennsports verpflichtet hat: Der Norweger Jon Odegard, der Schwede Rune Wedling, die Engländer Lew Coffin und Bill Bridgett, die Holländer Nic van Gorcum und Jop Noordhof starten auf ihren superschnellen JAP-Spezial-Maschinen und treffen auf nordwestdeutsche Spitzenfahrer wie Horst Kinkelber (Rothensüßeln), Gottfried Schwarz (Theenhausen) und Jan Käfer (Dorsten).

Das größte Interesse wird wiederum das Rennen der schweren Seitenwagen-Klasse mit den schnellsten europäischen Gespannen

Kurt Larssen und Bob Jessen aus Dänemark, Hermann Tempelmann und Gerard van Hengsten aus Holland, und dem Frankfurter BMW-Gespann Walter Mertinke beanspruchen. In der Klasse der 500-cm-Lizenz-Seitenwagen gibt es ein Wiedersehen mit Gerhard (Lüdinghausen), Schneider (Bremen), Hepp (Becklinghausen), Niebuhr (Hamburg) und dem Ippischen „Lokalmatador“ Werner Kelle (Oerlinghausen). Alle jagen das in der Wertung um die Nordwestdeutsche Bahnmeisterschaft führende Gespann Wesseloh (Schneverdingen) und werden es zum tollkühnen Einsatz aller Reserven zwingen, womit packende Position- und Endkämpfe garantiert sind.

Dem freien Training am Sonnabend, ab 15 Uhr, folgt am Sonntag ab 9 Uhr das Pflichttraining für alle Klassen und ab

11 Uhr der Start zu den Hauptrennen, zu dem wir dem wagemutigen MSC Lage einen sonnigen Sonntagnachmittag wünschen; denn dann wird der Zuschauerrekord des letzten Grasbahnrennens vor zwei Jahren mit fast 14 000 Besuchern überboten. Allen Motorsportfreunden sei verraten, daß die Sitzplatz-Tribünen wesentlich erweitert und auch die Sichtverhältnisse für alle Besucher verbessert wurden, so daß dieses 12. Internationale Grasbahnrennen im Mühlenbrink alle Anforderungen erfüllt, die an eine motorsportliche Großveranstaltung mit überregionalen Charakter gestellt werden. Parkplätze stehen in unmittelbarer Nähe des Mühlenbrinks in ausreichender Menge zur Verfügung, so daß alle Anzeichen auf einen neuen Zuschauerrekord beim 12. Internationalen „Hermannsland“-Grasbahnrennen des MSC Lage schließen lassen.

Fig. 142 [from the LZ, newspaper, re: the 12th Hermannsland-Grasbahnrennen, 1968].



Fig. 143 The Lipperland-Meute (hunt club) in the 1970s.

One association distinctly different from all the others was the Hardissen *Feuerwehr* (fire department), in that it was originally anything but a volunteer group. The history of the Lippe fire department can be traced back to the reign of Count Simon August. In the spirit of the *Aufklärung* (Enlightenment period) an attempt was made to make Lippe's interior more stable and orderly, and part of bringing in order and routine was fire protection. Simon August established a public *Brandkasse* (fire protection program), which later became the *Landes-Brandversicherungsanstalt* (institute for fire insurance). Along with the 'fire regulations for the flatlands' of 1756, came numerous instructions for fire precautionary measures. Ever since then, the *Gemeinde* had 'firemen' in reserve for making sure rules were complied with.²¹¹ On-site inspections were

started right away in Hardissen. As early as spring of 1757, fire chiefs Niedermeyer and Held brought charges against the elderly Mr. Bökhaus, after they 'found raw flax drying in his oven.' Pensioner Bökhaus had to pay a three Gulden fine.²¹²

The fire regulations had a provision that 'in every *Amt* or *Vogt*, a *Schlangenspritze* (fire hose) had to be purchased as soon as possible.'²¹³ Houses were to be equipped with leather buckets that were ready for use, as had been the practice in cities for some time. Starting in 1792, the *Brandkasse* paid for the fire-fighting equipment. As time went on, equipment for fire-fighting kept improving and the areas fire fighters were responsible for protecting kept getting smaller.

Toward the end of the 1700s, there were a total of 46 fire-fighting apparatuses in 40 Lippe villages, the

number doubling by 1835. From 1801 on, on-site inspections and fire-fighting test-runs were ordered.²¹⁴ In 1809, Hardissen got its own fire-fighting apparatus, a used one from Lage.²¹⁵ For the next few decades, *Spritzenmeister* (master fire fighters) Sepmann and Brüggemann took care of maintaining and testing the equipment. The fire-fighting apparatus soon proved to be too small for the Hardissen ‘fire-fighting district’, which also included the farming communities of Hörstmar, Heßloh, and Hagen. The manorial/territorial sovereign of Büllinghausen was also in this district, and the Prince’s administrative unit was especially interested in protecting it from fire. Thus, in 1818, Hardissen folks passed on their old fire-fighting apparatus to Haustenbeck, and got a new one from Alverdissen. At first, the ladder and small equipment parts were kept at the Feger and Röhr farms, with the fire hose, at least

since 1822, kept at a separate fire station. In 1853, the fire station underwent repairs.²¹⁶ This old building was torn down in 1913, and a new one built in a different location. Master carpenter, Berkemeier, and master mason, Kespohl, from Hardissen erected a tower (at first made of wood) where the hose could be dried out. The tower that replaced the original one remains a dominant feature of the view at the village’s entrance. The *Gemeinde* donated the land in front of the cemetery for the *Brandkasse* [fire office/station], and, in trade, the *Gemeinde* got back, for no outlay of cash, the site of the old fire station. For the old building itself, they paid the fire station a total of 20 Marks.²¹⁷

Since the legal reorganizing in 1924, the *Landes-Brandversicherungsanstalt* was no longer responsible for housing the fire-fighting equipment, hose casing, etc. It did, however, have to use a part of its



Fig. 143a Fire at the Röhr farm, around 1903.

revenue for fire protection. Ownership of the fire-fighting equipment, along with the job of housing it, now passed to the appropriate *Gemeinden*.²¹⁸

In addition to this official mandatory fire department, the first volunteer fire department started up in the 1870s. July 2, 1871, Ernst August Echterling of Lage wrote about a Hardissen fire: 'Yesterday, we had...really fierce thunder and lightening, and during it, Farmer Tappe's building in Hardissen was struck. This house burnt to the ground, and a farmhand and a horse were struck by lightening; the horse was killed on the spot, and the farmhand escaped with his life, with only some contusions on his body.'²¹⁹ We know of several other large fires in the first half of the 20th century, like the Brinkmeyer farm's family house burning down around 1919, a barn on the Büllinghausen estate

grounds burnt in 1934, and three years later a fire was put out on the Bam farm.²²⁰

The combination of fires and modernization measures have contributed to the almost total disappearance of *Fachwerk* [timbered] style houses on the Hardissen and Lückhausen farms. Fired brick or rough stone houses of the early 1900s dominate the scene today.²²¹

The Hardissen fire department was still strictly a non-volunteer fire department in 1940. At that time, it consisted of 24 members. The farmers, for the most part, were not themselves members; instead, they provided a fireman [representing the farm]. Beginning in 1926, Friedrich Berkemeier (No. 22), a member of the fire department since 1899, served as Fire Chief, the person in charge. In charge of hoses were deputy assistants Karl Fischer and Hermann Wiebusch;

Fig. 144 On the right side of the photo, the Hardissen fire station, with its old wooden tower.





Fig. 145 District fire chief, Wind, giving a speech at the fire department festival, 1955.

equipment trainer was Gustav Krone; climbers were Karl Kampmeier, August Vogt, Fritz Brink, and Adolf Brinkmann.²²²

After the war, Berkemeier continued to be Chief of the Hardissen fire department, and then in 1958 Heinrich Helle was appointed fire chief and headed the squad that had in the meantime become a volunteer fire department. From December 1955 on, Lage and the surrounding *Gemeinden* had formed a *Feuerlöschverband* [fire-fighting league] and went in together on purchases. The local fire departments, though, retained their importance; not least of all by providing a unifying/team spirit and assisting in integrating new residents into villages like Hardissen.

Every month the fire department had practice drills – in the winter, as Friedrich Fischer put it: ‘wet-happy-duties’ in the Rieke restaurant, and in the summer, practical drills. There were also camaraderie evenings and several fire department celebrations. In 1963, *Gemeinde* expenditures paid for renovating the Hardissen fire station. The fire station was called to two major fires during that time, with Hagen and the Lage fire departments also taking part. One was the fire at the Reese farm in Lückhausen, and the other, at the Feger farm in December, 1966.

On one hot summer day, when a field barn caught fire on the Büllinghausen estate, a strange situation occurred that made headlines, and even got into the *Bild-Zeitung* [newspaper]. Here is what happened: The



Fig. 146 The Hardissen Fire Department in a parade on the 75th anniversary of the Lage Fire Department, 1948. Written on the old horse-drawn fire engine was the inscription: “Vadder, et dunnert, soll ich’s anstecken?” [trans.: Plattdeutsch: ‘Father, it’s thundering, should I set fire to it?’]



Fig. 147 The Hardissen Fire Department in a festival parade, mid-1950s.

fire department members rushed to the fire station, opened the door, only to find the fire engine gone! As it turned out, Mayor Bökhaus had let a Lückhausen farmer use the machine to water his fields. But, with just a bit of a delay in getting to the fire, it was still able to be put out. The next day, this appeared in the newspaper: ‘The Hardissen Fire Department could not find their fire engine...’

As a result of the regional reform early in 1970, the Hardissen Fire Department, known as the “Löschgruppe Hardissen” (fire-fighting squad), became part of the Lage Freiwilliger (Volunteer) Feuerwehr. Leader of the fire-fighting squad was still Fire Chief Hein-

rich Helle, and they had a fire engine at their disposal. However, the Hardissen Fire Department, with its rich tradition, would exist only a few more years. The farms no longer offered enough work for people in town, and so many people worked out of town.

One morning the fire alarm sounded, and since some of the Hardissen Fire Department members could not be reached, there were not that many who responded to the fire call right away. The Lage Fire Department used this as a reason for closing down the Hardissen Fire Department in spring of 1978, since its force strength did not meet the new requirements. Huge disappointment and bitterness were registered in Hardissen, as was made clear in this statement by those who were affected by the closing, which appeared in the “Landeszeitung” (newspaper): ‘Unnoticed by the general public, yet another piece of village history, and with it a sense of community, has come to an end. The Hardissen Volunteer Fire Department existed almost 100 years – on February 28, 1978, it was dismissed from duty. The circumstances that brought that on were so trivial on the part of the city and the fire department command that the Hardissen firemen, after 20-30 years of service, declined to be publicly honored.’ The impression was that the Fire Department had been disbanded for political reasons, in order to break the last sense of village cohesiveness.²²³

Such callous actions on the part of the *Großgemeinde* did not exactly help to win friends for it in Hardissen, where it was disliked. From the Hardissen *Gemeinde* minutes, it could already be seen that people had mixed feelings about pursuing annexation to Lage.

On the one hand, simplifying municipal administration made sense: As early as 1969, the Hardissen *Gemeinde* Council had been working closely with their neighbor, Lage, entering into agreements on planned



Fig. 148 The Hardissen Fire Department in a festival parade, mid-1950s.

construction, maintaining highways. In addition, Hardissen was in a water association with Lage, and a 'cash outlay' association; and Hardissen did not have to provide much personnel of its own. And yet there were many Hardissen residents, and the then-mayor, Helle, who had reservations about the post-annexation make-up, and not the least reservation being the way the annexation had been pushed through. The *Gemeinden* had really only been presented with an almost done deal, and there had only been the appearance that they actually could freely decide. What arose then was the impression that centralization had been forced 'from the top'. What brought about the later co-founding of a CDU-*Ortsverein* (municipal association) and an SPD-*Ortsverein* by Hardissen and Hagen was the realization that the small-size party associations, if working together, could counterbalance

the central town and better protect the interests of the village components relative to those of the town.

In fact, the administrative reforms of the next few years did not always work to the advantage of Hardissen residents. The water pipes planned for the old-village part of Hardissen since 1969 did not get installed until much later. The 1978 planned hook-up did not happen because 20 of the families residing there did not like the terms offered to them for hook-up. Also in 1978, the new water system in Lückhausen became operational, serving Lage, Hardissen (but not the old village part), and Ehrentrup. Something had to be done soon in the old part of the village, though, because inspections of the residential wells turned up 12 with nitrate levels exceeding the new limits. The same thing was true of the cemetery wells that were weekly topped off with the help of a little tanker. Finally, in



Fig. 149 Festival tent in front of the Fischer farm's barn, 1955.

March of 1989, the water pipes started to be put in, after lengthy negotiations over hook-up fees finally came to an acceptable end. And concurrent with the installation of the water pipes, the town's electrical supply was completely transferred to buried cables. On the Hardissen moor, homes were well-built and more continued to be built, and that just served to make the disrepair of the town's infrastructure stand out even more by comparison. Only recently have additional facilities for this residential area, like a *Grundschule*, gymnasium, *Kindergarten*, and consumer goods store, been considered for future construction.²²⁴



Fig. 150 The [Hardissen] Fire Department squad at a field on the moor, in the 1950s.

Fig. 151 Group photo of the Fire Department at a social gathering of the squad in the 1960s.



IX. Farms and Houses

For explanation of this chapter, information given is: 1) the old house number that was in use from 1766 to the 1960s; 2) the current address; and 3) the farmstead name, which generally until 1864 stayed with it when a man married into the farm (and the man took the name of the farm), and even when the farm was taken over by a completely new *Kolon* (person who ran the farm).

The year given at the beginning shows, as far as is known, the year someone took over possession of the property. In the case of the older generation, this would be the year a couple got married. Use of “around” means a strong assumption that the year following “around” is correct, whereas, use of “ca.” [cir-

ca] means that there is less assurance of the exact year. Not designated are marriages of pensioners who had already turned over their property to someone else.

If there are several marriages in the next generation, as far as is possible, the birth year has been given as (*...) to help elucidate ancestry. Sometime in the 1800s, only first names, if known, were given. In accordance with the levels of ownership, the manorial lord or the farm size are given in the table in Chapter 2, Section 3, ‘Taxes and Services’ and Chapter 4, Section 2, ‘Agriculture and village-based industry in transition’.

‘Candid moments’, mainly from the *Salbücher* and the Address records, are identified with an asterisk



Fig. 152 View of the Reese farm, 1910.

(*). Additionally, about the 20th-century information, the owners are not sure about the circumstances of ownership, or change in ownership, and don't want to assert their correctness.²²⁵

Farm No. 1 Lückhausen 2-3 Niedermeyer

Owners (Besitzer):

- 1467* Herman of Ludingkhuse (1488/89*)
Herman Neddermegger
- c. 1500 Herman Meiger of Luedingkhuse, married Ilse NN²²⁶
- about 1539 Cord Niedermeyer, Herman's son, married Meyer of Büxten²²⁷
- 1577 Johann Niedermeyer, married Meyer of Pöppinghausen, evidently marriage II NN
- 1616 NN Niedermeyer, heiress, married Tonies Meyer of Heipke
- 1641 Hans Niedermeyer, 1st marriage, Katharina Krop or Gröne from Bega 2,²²⁸ 2nd marriage 1648, Ilsabein Meyer of Ribbentrup; they redeemed the farm from a substantial grain tax.
- 1697 Johan Hermann Niedermeyer (*1670), 1st marriage, Anna Catharina Hackemack from Heiden-Bentrup, 2nd marriage, 1734, widow Anna Sophia Krüger
- 1738 Franz Barthold Niedermeyer, married Sophie Elisabeth Brand from Lieme 2
- 1787 Ernst Friderich Adolph Niedermeyer, married Amalie Sofie Meyer-Jobst from Leese 1
- 1824 Ernst Friedrich Niedermeyer, married Friederike Henriette Meyer of Dörentrup from Hillentrup 1

- 1858 Friedrich August Niedermeyer, married Luise Meyer-Jobst from Dinglinghausen/Lütte 1, 2nd marriage, 1871, Wilhelmine Siekmeier from Cappel
- 1887 Gustav Niedermeyer, married, 1893, Luise Meierherm from Entrup 1, her 2nd marriage, 1901, August Reese from Pilenbruch/Welstorf 9
- 1901 Luise Niedermeyer, heiress, † about 1917
- 1936 Wilhelm Reese, married Margret Krietenstein from Hagen 6
- 1974* Jobst-Werner Reese, married Ina Görg from Hessisch-Oldendorf

No. 2 Lemgoer Str. 154 Bökhaus

Owners:

- 1391* de Meier van Bodekenhus²²⁹
- 1409* de meyer van dem Bodekenhus
- 1467* de Meyger van Bodekenhus (Bauerschaft Heßloh)
- 1528* Boechuss
- c. 1535 Berendt Meiger tom Bock(en)hueß married Jutta NN; they redeemed the farm in 1568
- c. 1570 Cord Bökhaus, married Anna NN
- c. 1595 Nolte Bökhaus, married Anneke Meyer from Sylbach
- 1635 Simon Bökhaus married Catharina, daughter of the farm blacksmith, Master Jobst Schmidt
- 1682 Hans Henrich Bökhaus, married Maria Magdalena Winter from Horn
- 1704 Anna Elisabeth Bökhaus, 1st marriage, Simon Henrich Havergoh from Wellen-



Fig. 153 The Bökhaus Farm, about 1900.





Fig. 155 The Rott (old gang) of the Schützengilde (Marksmen's Guild) Lage visiting the Bökhaus farm in the 1950s.

Fig. 156 View of the Bökhaus farm in its earlier condition.



Fig. 154 (left side) Bökhaus family in front of the farm, c. 1925.

- trup 4, 2nd, 1730, Tönnies Henrich Nieweg from Lieme, 3rd, 1731, Johann Arend Wißmann from Wissentrup, 4th, 1734, Otto Friedrich Meyer of Übbenstrup from Lockhausen
- 1750 Töns Henrich Bökhaus (*1722), married Maria Ilsabein Oldermann from Oldentrup, Vogtei Heepen
- 1779 Johann Töns Henrich Bökhaus, married Catharina Ilsabein Tasche from Lückhausen 8
- Inscription: ON OCTOBER 16, IN THE YEAR 1795, TÖNS HENDERICH BÖKHAUS AND HIS WIFE KATRINA ILSABEIN TASKEN FROM LÜCKHAUSEN, THIS MARRIED, COUPLE, IS HAVING THIS HOUSE BUILT. 'OH, MAY GOD PROTECT THIS HOUSE, THOSE WHO COME IN IT AND THOSE WHO GO OUT, BECAUSE WHATEVER IS STARTED WITH GOD, THAT WILL FIND A GOOD END.
- 1808 Friedrich Bökhaus married Hanna Friederike Meyer of Krentrup
- 1846 Friedrich Bökhaus married Justine Schemmel from Bexterhagen 2
- 1887 Auguste Bökhaus married Ernst Friedrichsmeier from Bega 12
- 1913 Karl Bökhaus married Auguste Mölling from Heßloh 2
- 1974* Karl-Ernst Bökhaus married Margarete Evers

No. 3 Hardisser Str. 82 Rühr

Owners:

- 1467* de roder
- 1528* de roder
- c. 1550 Hermann Rader, evidently his widow marriage II, before 1568, to Friedrich NN

- c.1590 Ernst Röhr, his widow's 2nd marriage, about 1601, Curt Freitag from Rentorf c.
- 1620 Johann Röhr married Anna NN, she married a 2nd time, in 1650, to Henrich Saak (Saeck) of Huxol
- 1668 Johann Bartold Röhr married first wife Anna Meyer of Hölsen, married the 2nd wife, prior to 1697, Elisabeth Sander; in 1697, they redeemed various service obligations the farm had.
- 1708 Hermann Wilhelm Röhr married Christine Elisabeth Held from No. 4
- 1734 Anna Christine Elisabeth Röhr, 1st marriage, Johann Hermann Honnerlage from Hovedissen, 2nd marriage (?), before 1758, Johann Christoph NN
- 1768 Johann Henrich Röhr, married Anna Catharina Elisabeth Niedermeyer from Lückhausen 1; her 2nd marriage was to



Fig. 157 Wagon with harvested hay in front of the old Röhr house.



Fig. 158 The Röhr family in the 1920s.

Fig. 159 View of the Kempkes farm in the 1950s.



1799 Henrich Adolph Korf from Hohenhausen 3
 Johann Henrich Röhr, married Anna Florentine Ilsabein Feger from No. 5; her 2nd marriage was to Johann Friedrich Christoph Havergoh from Müssen; his 2nd marriage, 1816, was to Luise Nieweg from Lieme 1; her 2nd marriage was: 1821 (to her stepson), Heinrich Röhr (*1803); divorced, 1848,²³⁰; his 2nd marriage, 1844, was to Florentine Henriette Heßloh from Heßloh 1

1868 Heinrich Röhr married Minna Siekmann from Nienhagen 7

1902 Heinrich Röhr married Hermine Hüsemann from Hörstmar 7

about 1939 Rudolf Röhr married Else Coster; her 2nd marriage was to Walter Kempkes

No. 4 Hardisser Str. 105 Held

Owners:

1422* Herm[ann] de Helt²³¹
 1456* Ludeker de Helt²³² (1467* Ludeke Helt)
 1497* Herman Helt
 1535* de Helt
 1582* Hans Held²³³
 1617* Amelungk Heldt
 1644* Jost Held (heir) 1st marriage c. 1643 NN, married, 1674, Rieke Krüger from Hagen
 1689* Arend Tönnies Held (heir) married NN

Fig. 160 Held family in 1933.





Fig. 161 Held farmhouse and buildings, 1955.

1708	Catharina Elisabeth Held married Simon Cord Röhr from No. 3	No. 5 Hardisser Str. 64	Feger
1736	Anna Ilsabein Heldt married Simon Heinrich Cronshage from Biensen	Owners:	
1768	Anna Margaretha Elisabeth Held married Johann Christoph Casimir Holzmeier from Brokhausen 4	1410*	Veg(h)er ²³⁴
1799	Simon Heinrich Held married Sophie Tölle from Dehlentrup 9	1467*	de veger
1842	Simon Henrich Ernst Held married Wilhelmine Helmig from Wissentrup 1	1528*	de vegher ²³⁵
1876	Heinrich Held married Emilie Meyer of Holzhausen	1568*	Ernst Feger ²³⁶
1926*	Heinrich Held (1956 widow Martha Held, born Deppe)	1570	Cordt Feger (*c. 1537) gave his farm to his brother because Cordt had eye disease.
1997*	Herbert and Barbara Seelig	1583	Hermann Feger married Meyer from Orbke (possibly, a 2nd marriage) NN ²³⁷ ; [Meyer's] 2nd marriage, 1597, was to Bernt Niebuhr
		1615	Johann Feger married Lucke Hackemack from Bentrup 3; her 2nd marriage,

*Fig. 162 Feger Family, around
1880/85.*





Fig. 162a Pencil drawing of the Feger farm by G. Lesching, 1949.

	1637, was to Jobst Schmidtmeier from Meiersfeld 1		Karoline Luise Drewes from Schmedissen 1
1660	Johann Feger (*about 1636) married Anna Ilsabein Meyer of Barkhausen from Barkhausen near Detmold, ²³⁸ ; her 2nd marriage, 1665, was to Gottschalk Adrian Meyer-Jobst from Leese 1; 3rd marriage, 1673 was to Cordt Lüer from Bremke 2; 4th marriage, 1678, was to Lüdeke Held from Hardissen 4; his 2nd marriage, 1689, was to Anna Maria Ilsabein Beining from Retzen 4		Inscription. IN 1833, WITH THE HELP OF GOD, AND ACCORDING TO THE PLAN OF HER HUSBAND, JOHAN TÖNS CHRISTOPH FEGER, WHO DIED APRIL 26 TH OF THE PREVIOUS YEAR, WIDOW FEGER, BORN DREWES, HAD THIS HOUSE BUILT ON JUNE 1 A.C. M. STUKENBROK
		1833	Friedrich Feger married Karoline Heßloh 1; her 2nd marriage, 1837, was to Heinrich Konrad Prött-Reineke from Entrup
		1866	Friedrich Feger (*1833) married Hermine Deppe from Unterwüsten 14
1693	Johann Berend Feger (*about 1662), 1st marriage was to Anna Catharina Rethmeyer from Billinghamen 4; 2nd marriage, 1698, was to Catharina Ilsabein Meyer of Wöhren; her 2nd marriage, 1704, was to Hans Henrich Glietz from Döldissen; her 3rd marriage, 1723, was to Joh. Hermann Benkelberg	1901	Friedrich Feger married Hermine Exter from Pottenhausen
		1936	Friedrich Feger married Editha Bicker from Retzen 5
		1997*	Friedrich Feger married Dietlinde Pott-hoff from the Gronhof [farm]/Holzhausen
1728	Anna Catharina Feger (*around 1695), married Johann Henrich Meyer of Ohrsen from Ohrsen 1; his 2nd marriage, 1743, was to Marie Elisabeth Helweg from Nienhagen 1; and 3rd marriage, 1751, was to Anna Maria Ilsabein Glietz from Döldissen; her 2nd marriage, before 1759, as to Johann Henrich NN ²³⁹		
1766	Johann Hermann Christoph Feger (*1742) married Anna Maria Elisabeth Röhr from No. 3, in 1791, they redeemed the farm from a <i>Kanon</i> (yearly fee)		
1799	Johann Töns Christoph Feger, 1st marriage was to Anna Sophie Niedermeyer from Brüntrup 1; his 2nd marriage was to		
			No. 6 Hardisser Str. 62 Niebuhr
			Owners:
		1410*	Niggebur ²⁴⁰
		1467*	Nygebur
		1528*	Nyebur
		c. 1570	Cordt Niebuhr married Ilschen (Feger?) ²⁴¹
		1607	Curdt Niebuhr married Ilschen Avenhaus from Heiden 1
		1642	Arendt Niebuhr married Ilßgen Möller of the “Vogelsang” (birdsong) from Wellentrup; her 2nd married, 1648, was to Hans Niebuhr from Greste
		1676	Ilsabein Niebuhr (*1646) married Hans Henrich Böhmer from the Vogelhorst (bird thicket)/Lütte 4, ²⁴² ; his 2nd marriage



*Fig. 163 The Niebuhr farmhouse,
c. 1910.*



*Fig. 164 View of the Niebuhr
farm, c. 1980.*

- ge, 1679, was to Anna Catharina Lüer from Bremke 2; his 3rd marriage, 1688, was to Maria Elisabeth Schlingjacob from Nienhagen 8; his 4th marriage, 1697, was to Anna Elisabeth Bröcker from Lage.
- 1694 Anna Maria Niebuhr (*1676) married Johan Hermann Biesemeyer from Heesten
- 1715 Anna Ilsabein Niebuhr married Adolph Wilhelm Röhr from No. 3
- about 1755 Hermann Adolph Niebuhr married Drave from Ehrentrup. After Hermann's early death in 1756, his brother, Johann Henrich ran the farm for the heiress²⁴³
- 1774 Anna Maria Elisabeth Niebuhr married Jobst Conrad Philipp Meyer of Krentrup 1774, continued, (the marriage ended in divorce), and 2nd marriage was in 1794 to Johann Henrich Tasche from Lückhausen 8 (in 1820 he drowned in the Werre).
- 1825 Johann Friedrich Niebuhr (*1783) married Florentine Amalie Niemann from Währentrup
- 1860 Friedrich Niebuhr married Auguste Stelter from Nienhagen 2
- 1903 Alwin Niebuhr (1916, widow Henriette Niebuhr, born Lukebart from No. 10)
- 1936 Alwin Niebuhr married Martha Bicker from Retzen 5
- 1974* Klaus Niebuhr married Liesel Fritzeimer from the Nolte farm near Schieder

No. 7 Lückhausen 1 Obermeister

Owners:

- ?1467* Herman viningk (?) de uppere²⁴⁴
- 1535* de Auermeister (Lückhausen)
- c. 150 Nolte Obermeyer married Anna Meyer of Hölsen; 2nd marriage, 1594, was to Alheid Krietenstein from Hagen 6²⁴⁵
- 1615 Cordt Obermeyer of Lückhausen married a daughter of Niedermeyer farm No. 1; her 2nd marriage, 1629, was to Bartholt Meyer-Jobst from Leese 1; his 2nd



Fig. 165 Timbered house on the Obermeister farm, 1997.

	marriage, 1644, was to Margarete Hellweg from Heidenoldendorf 1; her 2nd marriage, 1654, was to Cordt Ernsting from Hagen	1778	Johann Henrich Obermeier married Marie Louise Meier-Jobst from Leese 1
1669	Jobst Obermeyer (*around 1638), 1663, married Anna Ilsabein Tasche from No. 8	1807	Johann Henrich Obermeier married Florentine Brand from Lieme
1699	Henrich Jobst Obermeyer married Catharina Margretha Geers from Hörste; her 2nd marriage, 1725, was to Johann Christoph Töttemeyer from Heiligenkirchen 4	1848	Heinrich Wilhelm Obermeier married Caroline Amalie Niedermeyer from No. 1
1735	Johann Jobst Obermeyer married Anna Maria Elisabeth Niedermeyer from No. 1; her 2nd marriage, 1760, was to Barthold Henrich Starke from Brokhausen 2.	1876	Wilhelm Obermeier (1908 widow Hermine Obermeier, born Brand)
		1911	Wilhelm Obermeier married Obermann from Ehlenbruch
		1962*	Wilhelm Obermeier married Schwabedissen from the Lieme Tower farm
		1997*	Friedhelm Obermeier married Ursula Pott from Krentruperhagen

Fig. 166 On the Tasche farm in Lückhausen, c.1930.



No. 8 Lückhausen 8**Tasche**

1690

Owners:

- 1467* Tassche
 1512* Hans Kater married Drude(n) NN²⁴⁶
 c. 1550 Sivert Tasche
 1584 Hermann Tasche (Sivert's son) married Anneken Branding from Lieme; his 2nd marriage, 1590, was to Catharina, daughter of Hermann Röhr No. 3
 1619 Johann Tasche married Anna Sunnermann; her 2nd marriage, around 1630, was to Engelke Meier-Rieks from Orbke 6²⁴⁷
 1654 Hermann Tasche married Cathrina Meyer-Barthold from Wittigenhöfen/Leese 2

1719

Gottschalk Tasche married Anna Ilsabein Brede from 5 Dehlentrup. In 1705, she, a widow with seven children, was driven from the debt-laden farm. The new Meier was Tasche's cousin, Johann Wilhelm Obermeyer from Lückhausen 7; he married the widow in 1711, and she then returned to the farm²⁴⁸

With Jobst Diederich Tasche, a son of Gottschalk's, the original family who possessed the farm, *ex nova gratia* ('by new grace') got it back.²⁴⁹ He [Jobst Diederich] married Ilsabein Büteröwe (Büterübe) from Oldentrup, of the Vogtei Heepen



Fig. 167 View of the Tasche farm, before the war.



Fig. 168 View of the Brinkmeyer farm, around 1950.

INSCRIPTION. ON JULY 18, IN THE YEAR 1727, JOST DIEDERICH TASKE AND ILSABEIN BÜTERÜBE FROM ALTENTRUP HAD THIS HOUSE BUILT BY M[ASTERBUILDER] JOH. C[ORDT] R[EDEKER]. IF YOU COMMAND TO THE LORD YOUR WORKS, SO WILL YOUR ATTEMPT[S] GO FORWARD. PROVERBS (SOLOMON QUOTE), CH. 16, VERSE 3.²⁵⁰

1752

1789

Anna Catharina Ilsabein Tasche married Johann Henrich Meyer of Ohrsen from Ohrsen 1; his 2nd marriage, 1766, was to Amalie Honerlage from Hovedissen
 Franz Henrich Tasche (* 1758/61),²⁵¹ married Friederike Eberhardine Charlotte Krüger from the Lower Mill (Nieder-

mühle) in the Hillentrup parish; her 2nd marriage, 1795, was to Johann Hermann Lambracht from Bexterhagen 1

1821 Franz Henrich Tasche (* 1795) married Friederike Lüking from Ubbedissen 1; his 2nd marriage, 1837, was to Henriette Amalie Lüking from Evenhausen 9

1867? August Tasche (* 1824) married, 1859, Friederike Henriette Amalie Baumert, heiress to Grastrup 6

1887 August Tasche

1926* August Tasche married Berta Häger from Sibbentrup

1962* Berta Oberkrome, born Tasche

1997* Dr. Friedrich Oberkrome-Tasche married Margret Böltke from Oettern-Bremke 3

No. 9 Hardisser Str. 109 Brinkmeyer

Owners:

1467* Bringkmanß frubbe

1488* Bring Herman (1497 Brinckhermen)

1510* Brinck Cort (still Brinckcordt, 1545)

1551* Brinckhermenn (still Brinck Hermenn, 1572)²⁵²

1587* Brinck Ernst; his widow's 2nd marriage, 1594, was to Friedrich NN

1618 Brinck Curt, married Anna Luckebarth from No. 10

1652 Brinck Henrich married Trinecke Lüttmann from Hörstmar 3



Fig. 169 Photo c. 1950 of the former main house of the Brinkmeyer farm; it now belongs to Roth.



Fig. 169a Wilhelm Brinkmeyer and Mathilde Brinkmeyer, born Schalk, around 1890.

- 1683 Tönnies Brinck married Anna Ilsabein Niebuhr from No. 6; in 1706, she married 2nd husband, Simon Jost in Ohrde, a widower from Heiden
- 1726 Johan Berendt Brinkmeier, heir, died in 1728, unmarried; his mother then had the farm until her death in 1731, below
- 1731 Anna Maria Brinkmeyer married Johann Henrich Tappe No. 11 in 1726; and that gave him possession of both the No. 11 and No. 9 farms; in 1733 he married Anna Maria Avenhaus from the mill at Heiden;²⁵³ his 3rd marriage was to the widow Avenhaus from there



Fig. 170 The Brinkmeyer family in the summer of 1950.

Inscription (on the house at Hardisser Str. 107, in the meantime sold to the Roth family)

ON JULY 25, IN THE YEAR 1758, JOHAN HENDERICH TAPPE HAD, WITH THE HELP OF GOD, THIS HOUSE BUILT. WHOEVER TRUSTS IN GOD HAS BUILT WELL IN HEAVEN AND ON EARTH. WHOEVER RELIES ON JESUS CHRIST, HEAVEN SHALL BE HIS. M[ASTERBUILDER]. "S.F.B"

about 1760 Johann Bernhard Brinkmeyer (* 1728) married Anna Maria NN, her 2nd marriage, 1762, was to Johann Christoph Avenhaus from the mill in Heiden; his 2nd marriage, 1765, was to Anna Ilsabein Obermeier from Lückhausen 7; his 3rd marriage, 1766, was to Anna Sophia Niere from Wahmbeck; and her 2nd marriage, 1789, was to Simon Henrich Korf from Hohenhausen 3

1808 Jobst Henrich Brinkmeier (*1779) married Louise Charlotte Elisabeth Krop from Bega 2

1839 Adolph Brinkmeier, married Wilhelmine Feger from No. 5

1878 Wilhelm Brinkmeyer, 1st marriage, 1872, Sophie Flügel from Heesten 9; 2nd marriage, 1877, was to Berta Schalk from Übbentrup/Lockhausen 11; 3rd marriage, 1881, was to Berta's sister, Mathilde Schalk

1900 Wilhelm Brinkmeyer (*1873) married Laura Klaßmeier from Kirchheide

1953* Dr. jur [= J.D.; attorney], Wilhelm Brinkmeyer (1953 widow Marie-Luise Brinkmeyer, born Büttner, of the Rittergut [Knight's estate] Küterbrok near Heesten)

1974* Wilhelm Brinkmeyer married Gisela Melin from Uppen near Hildesheim



Fig. 171 Lukebart/Bam farm, c. 1920.

No. 10 Lemgoer Str. 164	Lukebart	1688	Johann (Ludolph) Lukebart, married Clara Anna Bökhaus from No. 2
Owners		1721	Johann Hermann Lukebart, 1st marriage was to Anna Ilsabein Nieweg from Lieme 1; 2nd marriage, 1740, was to Anna Maria Feger from No. 5
1409*	Honderbat (?)		
1467*	Lukebart (Bauerschaft Heßloh)		
1486*	Gosschalk Lukebart at the Bodekenhues in the Heiden Parish ²⁵⁴	?1765*	Christ. Lukebart
1535-90*	Lukebar(d)t (Bauerschaft Heßloh). Around the middle of the 16th century, the owner (Cordt?), born at the Bökhaus farm ²⁵⁵	?1768*	Johann Hermann Lukebart, married Anna Catharina Beste aus Lämershagen, 2nd marriage? before 1773, Anna Catharina Dreimann
1596*	Johann Lukebart (heir), married Knakeback from Heßloh	1778	Anna Ilsabein Wilhelmine Lukebart (*around 1762), first marriage was to Johann Bernd Gerves from Meiersfeld; 2nd marriage, 1797, was to Johann Henrich Brinkmeyer from No. 9; his 2nd mar-
1644*	Johann Luckebarth		
1656	Alheit Lukebart, married Tönnies Sülte-meier from Heiden 2		



Fig. 172 The oldest house in Hardissen, located on the Tappe/Brandsmeier farm, c. 1930, built in 1710.

1811 riage, 1800, was to Anna Maria Elisabeth Niedermeyer from Billinghamen
 Johann Töns Lukebart married Anne Marie Sophie Elisabeth Gelhaus from Heiden; her 2nd marriage, 1815, was to Hermann Henrich Huneke from Wistinghausen 6

1841 Friedrich Lukebart (*1814); 1st marriage was to Anne Marie Henriette Amalie Mölling from Heßloh 2; 2nd marriage, 1845, was to Henriette Mölling from Heßloh 2
 1873 Henriette Lukebart (*1853) married August Rieke from Hagen 1
 1915 Bertha Rieke or Lukebart married, before 1920, Wilhelm Bam
 1953* Otto Bam married Emilie Pollmann from Müssen-Breitenheide
 1997* Volker Bam

No. 11 Hardisser Str. 80 Tappe

Owners:

1467* Reyneke Tappe
 1497* Tappe Henne
 1535* The owner of the *johan tappen hoff* is free; his wife and farm are bound to the Landesherr (sovereign).
 1535* Tappe
 1572* Frederich Tappe
 1582* Nolte Tappe
 1617* Nolte Tappe
 1644* Coerdttappe
 1663 Cordt Tappe (heir, *around 1638) married, 1662, Elisabeth Krome or Feger; 2nd marriage, 1665, was to Anneke Lübbecke from Lütte
 1698 Johann Jost Tappe married Anna Elisabeth Krüger from Hagen; his 2nd marriage, 1705, was to Anna Maria Röhr from No. 3
 1726 Johann Henrich Tappe married Anna Maria Brinkmeyer from No. 9; around



Fig. 173 View of the Brandsmeier farm.

	1731; he also obtained possession of her parental farm and later completely relocated there, and apparently the Tappe farm came under new ownership:	1785	Christine Elisabeth Tappe (heiress, *1762) married Johann Hermann Brockschmidt
1743*	Johann Arend Tappe	1818	Johann Berend Tappe married Henriette Florentine Wilhelmine Lukebart from No.10
1766*	Hans Henrich Tappe married Anna Catharina Brinkmeier from No. 9 (?)	1853	Friedrich Wilhelm Adolph Tappe married Johanne Sophie Amalie Siekmann from Nienhagen 7; his 2nd marriage, 1865,

Fig. 174 Drawing of the Brüggemann house.



	was to Sophie Sprick from Maßbruch 12; her 2nd marriage, 1866, was to August Feger from No. 5	No. 12 Hardisser Str. (76b/78 Brüggemann
1885	Julius Tappe (* 1860) married Minna Laghusemann	Owners:
1953*	Albrecht Tappe married Emmy Obermeier	1497* de Junge Tappe Henne (no doubt a son from Farm No. 11, who got a piece of land as compensation; still mentioned in 1510)
1997*	Hans-Jürgen Brandsmeier (nephew of Albrecht and grandson of Julius Tappe)	1528* ? Goss alcke (?) (free, the property bound, provides work services four days a year)
		1535* is still noted as the small farm-holding (Stätte) Tappe Henne, but without a note that the land tax was paid
		1535-45 ? Bern(n)dt Knakeback
		c. 1550 Johan der Brugken married Ilse Boberg ²⁵⁶ (1562-72* Johan vor der Bruggen)



Fig. 175 Frau Wächter in front of Brüggemann's Kötter house in the 1950s.

- c. 1590 Brug Cordt, apparently his widow, Ilsche, married, around 1600, the tailor, Johann Timmermann
- 1619* Brüggemann Amelung (heir) married Ilschen Lukebart from No. 10; [Ilschen's] 2nd (?) marriage, 1650, was to Johann

- Schröder, Brand's farmhand at Lieme; he died, 1672, childless
- about 1673 Franz Reuter buys this Stätte and calls himself Brüggenn Franz; married Gretgen NN. In 1685 he 'fell from a beam to his death' and left behind seven small children
- 1700 Han Henrich Brüggemann married Anna Dorothea Sibilla Christina Kerckhoff from Hagen
- 1734 Johann Töns Brüggemann married Anna Margretha Ilsabein Krumsiek from near Kachtenhausen
- 1770 Amalie Brüggemann married Henrich Hermann Senke from Wahmbeck; his 2nd marriage, 1782, was to Anna Margaretha Elisabeth Huxol from Rentorf
- 1793 Johann Henrich Brüggemann married Hanne Sophie Tasche from Bentrup (childless?)
- 1803 Simon Carl Brüggemann married Anna Maria Elisabeth Dreier from Hörstmar; her 2nd marriage, 1817, was to Johann Hermann Henrich Pivit from Waddenhausen. In 1803 the Stätte was redeemed from having to pay a Kanon (yearly payment)
- 1839 Simon Henrich Brüggemann married Konradine Dreier from hagen
- 1901* Simon Brüggemann, Bauerrichter (farmer-judge)
- 1926* Widow Konradine Brüggemann (born Dreier)
- 1962* Ernst Brüggemann
- 1997* Rainer Brüggemann (Werkzeug-Formenbau GmbH/Tool molding business)



Fig. 176 An old photo of the Fischer farm.

No. 13 Dilleweg 1

Grünnemann

1678

Anna Catharina from the Hausstätte in Ehrentrup married Johann Jost Lukebart; her 2nd marriage, 1691, was to Johann Multhoff from Wiembeek²⁵⁹

Owners:

1657

Hermann Wrampe from Heßloh 3, pays 2 Talers for a *Weinkauf*; married, before 1631 NN Tappe²⁵⁷ from No. 11. They called themselves – probably after the field they cultivated – “auf den Gründen” (on the grounds) or „Grünnemann”. In 1644 Wrampe was still *ein Inliegger unnd hat in Tappen Hof zue Hardißen 40 R[eichs]th[ale]r unndt sitz[t] fur die Zinse jährlich daselbst zurHeuer*. In the chain of ownership, a generation was skipped, and the Stätte went directly to a granddaughter:²⁵⁸

1717

Hans Henrich Gründen married Anna Ilsabein Körner from Stadenhausen; her 2nd marriage, 1721, was to Johann Christoph Kampmeier from Brokhausen
Anna Catharina Gründen (*Dec. 1721), married Hans Barthold Huxhol from Bavenhausen

1745

The inscription on the house, torn down in 1997, names the couple who had the house built: ‘HANS BARTTEL HENDERRICHT HUSCKOL FROM BOONSEN AND ANNA KATTRIENE GRUNN FROM HARDISSEN (1772)



Fig. 177 The Fischer timbered house at the corner of Hardisser Straße and Dilleweg, torn down in 1997; 1995 photo.

around 1773 Wilhelm Grundemann/Grünne[mann]
(heir) married Maria Elisabeth Sobbe
from Hagen

1830

1804 Anna Cathrina Ilsabein Grunnens (heire-
ss) married Johann Bartold Brüning from
Hengstheide/Lieme; his 2nd marriage,

1807, was to Justine Friederike Florenti-
ne Grunnemann, a sister of his first wife
Justine Friederike Florentine Grunneman
married Johann Friedrich Franz Henrich
Grabbe from Heidenoldendorf 51

- 1862 Heinrich Friedrich Barthold Grunnemann married Louise Sophie Charlotte Niebuhr from No. 6
- 1901* (bought it), Adolf Fischer from Heiden 52; married Büschemann from Heiden; 2nd marriage was Heßloh from Heßloh; 3rd marriage, Amalie Berkemeier from Hardissen
- 1953* Karl Fischer married Emma Meuser from Waldeck on the Edersee
- 1962* Friedrich Fischer married Anita Töpfer from Lodz

No. 14 (Hardisser Str. 111) Wächter

Owners:

- 1595 Brinck Cord, called Wächter, brother of Brinck Ernst at No. 9; the second husband of Brinck's widow, Brinck Friedrich, was in debt, and wanted to sell Brinck Cord a bit of land to put a house on;²⁶⁰ Curt Wechter married Ilse Claus in 1599
- 1644* Herman Wechter (several marriages)
- 1668 Berthold Wechter married the daughter of Henrich Erffkamp from the Breiten moor; the Stätte *lange wüste gelegen* [long lay deserted]
- 1697 Berend Henrich Wächter married Katharina Müller (Möller) from Hagen
- 1731 Johann Diederich Wächter from hagen (!) married Anna Margaretha Ilsabein Krietenstein from Hagen; her 2nd marriage, 1737, was to Johann Henrich Deppe from Hörstmar; his 2nd marriage, 1741,

- 1773 was to Anna Margaretha Ilsabein Grünen from No. 13
- 1808 Johann Bernd Wächter married Anna Ilsabein Giese of the Wittighöfer moor
- 1837 Johann Bernd Wächter married Anna Maria Ilsabein Oelmüller from Entrup; her 2nd marriage, 1812, was to Christoph Sprenger from Kachtenhausen
- 1877 Friedrich Wächter (*1812) married Wilhelmine Lukebart from No. 10
- 1901 Friedrich Wächter
- 1921 *Gottlieb Wächter, Ziegler (brickmaker) Master butcher August Wächter sold the Kolonat (farm) No. 14 to Widow Niebuhr No. 6, whereupon it became part of Niebuhr's farm. Later the property was purchased by the Remmert family. For the Gastwirtschaft *Wächter* that went up on a lot next to No. 14, see No. 33

No. 15 (Hardisser Str. 76) Sepmann

Owners:

- 1666 Seepen Johann had the Weinkauf for the new Stätte, for the first time²⁶¹
- 1673 Seep Johan's daughter; married Henrich Weßel from Hörstmar; his 2nd marriage (?), 1674, was to Anna Krüger from Waddenhaussen²⁶²; his 3rd marriage, 1701, was to Lucken Henrich's daughter, from Lieme

1704	Clara Ilsabein Sep (*around 1674) married Johann Hermann Stock of the Hengst moor/Lieme		rently, it was never moved; the <i>Stätte</i> was in debt and was later leased
1733	Johann Henrich Sep married Christine Knaback from Heßloh	1876	Wilhelm Seppmann. In 1884 part of the farmstead was sold to Brüggemann No. 12; on the remaining property, Seppmann put up a <i>Neuwohnerstätte</i> (new residence). Apparently, this place kept the old house number, but was on the Hardissen moor, later at: Hudeweg 9, Owners:
1766	Johann Henrich Sep marriage Anna Margaretha Schöning from Lieme; her 2nd married, before 1774, was to Johann Henrich Schneider		Wilhelm Boberg, brickmaker
1792	Johann Henrich Sepmann, master carpenter, 1st marriage was to Elisabeth Grauting from Heiden; 2nd marriage, 1805, was to Anna Maria Bicker from Hagen; her 2nd marriage, 1820, was to Johann Henrich Welle from Mackenbruch	1901* 1926* 1962* 1997*	August Hollmann August Hollmann (Owner is Eugen Hollmann)
No. 16 Hardisser Str. 74 Brink(mann)			
1828*	Anna Maria Seppmann, 1st marriage, 1818, was to Henrich Joseph Kleinkort from Kleinenberg near Büren (the couple lived as Einlieger in Ohrsen, where the heir, born under the name of Kleinkort was also born); her 2nd marriage, 1828, was to Philipp Henrich Quakernack (both lived for a while in Senne II, Oerlinghausen parish)	Owners: 1719	Brinck Henrich obtained a <i>Hausstätte</i> on the common land; despite protests of a few people who used the commons, it was built on part of Feger's and Brinkmeyer's pasture section. ²⁶³ "Brinck Henrich" stands for Jacob Henrich Brink[meyer] from No. 9; married, 1704, Ernestina Hasselmann from Lage
1851	Friedrich Wilhelm Seppmann (*1820), married Sophie Karoline Clementine Wegener from Klüt 16; her 2nd marriage, 1857, was to Hermann Friedrich Böhmer from Heidenoldendorf, brickmaker. As the interim farmer-owner, he planned to move the building, 1861, to the Hardissen moor. The <i>Kolonat</i> (farmstead) lay right on the banks of the Oetternbach and in bad weather, floods were a threat. Appa-	1733 1775	Johann Henrich Brinkmann/-meyer, 1st marriage was to Anna Ilsabein Blasekatte from Lage; 2nd marriage, 1741, was to Anna Margaretha Ilsabein Wend from Hedderhagen Amalia Ilsabein Brinkmann married Johann Henrich Beckmann or Pollmann from Hörstmar; his 2nd marriage, 1794, was to Anna Sophia Büschen from Heßloh



Fig. 178 Werning family in front of the house at No. 16, c. 1910/20.

- 1817 Anna Sophia Elisabeth Brinkmann (*1796) married Johann Henrich Niehaus from Pottenhausen 28; her 2nd marriage, 1841, was to Simon Henrich Wächter from Bechterdissen
- 1861 Karl Brinkmann; he sold the *Stätte* in 1864, and reserved land on the Hardissen moor for a new place, No. 18
- 1864 (bought it) Hermann Werning from Augustdorf, Master mason in Nienhagen; married, 1843, Widow Anna Katharina Louise Amalie Helle, born Mellies. She sold the *Stätte* to her son:
- 1870 Hermann Werning married, 1874, Luise Budde from Heidenoldendorf
- ca. 1930 Lina Werning, married Friedrich Brink from Heidenoldendorf
- 1954 Fritz Brink, Florist and Nursery [Gärtnerei]

No. 17 (Lemgo-Lieme) Mühle Büllinghausen

Owners:

Over the years, several Lippe milling families have done business here, as lessees; and they will not be described in detail here. From the 17th century millers, mention can be made of those from Rhiene; around 1700, there were two generations of Offels, then came Bicker and in 1745, Lambracht from Wüsten. Starting in 1765, several generations of Möller or Müller from Talle leased and ran the mill; in 1817, Vietmeier took over as interim manager; in 1832, August Starke married into the family (operating the mill). After Starke announced bankruptcy in 1864, Miller August Bullermann from Leese took over (got the lease), and by



Fig. 179 Gustav and Luise Hebrok in the 1930s.

1869 had gone bankrupt. The next owners were Lemgo merchant, Ludwig Vietmeier, and Miller Carl Brand from Milse. After Brand died in 1885, the mill went to his widow and she passed it on to her son, who inherited the lease, in 1887. In 1901, Miller Fritz Meier-Ernst leased the mill. In 1923, the mill was relocated to Lieme.

House number 17 was later reissued to the house located at Dilleweg 46 (1962* owned then by Henni Wind, today by Neugebauer).



Fig. 180 The Menze house, earlier Hebrok's, at Herbergstr., 1997.

No. 18 Hudeweg 17

Brinkmann

Owners:

1864 Karl Brinkmann, master mason and farmer from No. 16, started this Stätte
 1902 Adolf Brinkmann
 1962* Adolf Brinkmann
 1997* Walter and Dirk Brinkmann

No. 19 Herbergstr. 50

Owners:

1868 Moritz, lessee of the brickyard in Lage established the Stätte on piece of ground that had previously belonged to the merchant, Helmeyer in Lage. Originally, there had been dealing for a bit of woods (copse) on Lukebart farm No. 10, in Hardissen's moorland
 1873 (bought it), August Gaus from Dahlhausen, master mason
 1889 Heinrich Wiebusch from Greste, brick-maker
 1926* Hermann Wiebusch, senior and junior
 1974* Auguste Wiebusch; the house was later sold

No. 20 Herbergstr. 62

Owners:

- 1868 likewise, a 'new residential Stätte from Moritz's'; see above, No. 19
- 1873 (bought it), Karl Hebrok from Hakenheide
- 1926* Karl and Friedrich Hebrok
- 1962* Gustav Hebrok, married Luise Dierk
- 1974* Inge Menze, born Hebrok

No. 21 Hardisser Str. 51/53

Owners:

- 1875 Adolph Helle from Hardissen, married, 1866, Wilhelmine Henriette Amalie Wächter from No. 14. Helle bought a parcel of pastureland from his mother-in-law and established a *Stätte* on it
- 1921 Adolf Helle, Jr., Butcher (who does on-site butchering) and brickmaker.
- 1974* Günter Brune, Helmut Blanke

No. 22 Hardisser Str. 67/75

Owners:

- 1881 established by master carpenter, Friedrich Berkemeier, on land from No. 13, in the moorland
- 1926* Friedrich Berkemeier, master carpenter
- 1995* Heinz Kreuzbusch; on an adjoining piece of land, the building-trade continued to be carried on by:
- 1962* Heinrich Mellies from Hiddesen, construction trade's cabinet-maker shop
- 1997* Heinrich Mellies; Rainer Siekmann, cabinet-maker's shop

No. 23 Lückhauser Str. (30/)32

Owners:

- 1883 established by Einlieger, Heinrich Ostmann from Wissentrup on land from Röhr farm No. 3, on the moor
- 1926* Widow Johanne Ostmann and Heinrich Ostmann
- 1962* Heinrich Kleine-Ostmann
- 1997* Sabine Kleine-Ostmann

No. 24 Herbergstr. 44

Owners:

- 1888 established by Wilhelm Hagenböhmer, brickmaker, on land from Held (farm) No. 4 on the moor
- 1926* Simon Hagenböhmer
- 1954* Gustav Voß (via marriage)
- 1974* (Owner, Helmut Voß, who later sold the house)

No. 25 Hardisser Str. 57

Owners:

- 1887 established by brickmaker, Karl Kuhlemann, on land from No. 13 on the moor
- 1901* Widow Henriette Kuhlemann
- 1926* Heinrich and Gustav Kuhlemann
- 1954* August Bartels
- 1974* Mathilde Bartels and Hilde Hillemeier, both born Kuhlemann

No. 26 Herbergstr. 48

Owners:

- 1889 established by brickmaker, Adolf Schlingheider, on land from Held No. 4 on the moor
- 1926* Wilhelm Hartwig
- 1974* Willi Hartwig
- 1997* Wilhelm Hartwig; Karin Hartwig married Siegfried Meier

No. 27 Obernkamp 12

Owners:

- 1888 established by Friedrich Pielsticker, on land from Niebuhr No. 6 on the moor.
- 1901* Heinrich Vogt, brickmaker
- 1946* Rudolf Vogt
- 1974* Fritz Vogt

No. 28 Obernkamp 1

Owners

- 1888 established by Friedrich Schäfer, married Luise Beersiek; once *Kotten* [cottage, small acreage] of Niebuhr No. 6 on the moor
- 1926* Friedrich Schäfer, Steuererheber (tax collector), Richard Schäfer
- 1962* Luise Koke and Lina Kortekamp, both born with the name Schäfer



Fig. 181 Frau Rieke and her daughter, Edith, in front of the Gastwirtschaft Wächter, 1952.



*Fig. 182 Herr and Frau
Weege in front of the
Wächter house, 1934.*

No. 29 Harsdörferstr. 9

Owners:

- 1891 established by brickmaker Fritz Fischer from Hagen, on land from Held No. 4 on the moor
- 1926* Widow Wilhelmine Fischer, Heinrich, Gustav, and Ernst Fischer
- 1954* Gustav Fischer, tailoring business
- 1962* Lina Fischer
- (1997* Günter Fischer; the house is torn down)

No. 30 Harsdörferstr. 1

Owners:

- 1891 established by brickmaker, Fritz Blanke, on land from Held No. 4 on the moor
- 1901* Widow Charlotte Blanke
- 1926* Hermann and Fritz Pohlmann
- 1997* (Owner, Hans Pohlmann in Evenhausen)

No. 31 Harsdörferstr. 5

Owners:

- 1901* Hermann Stölting
- 1926* Friedrich Stölting
- 1974* Martha Wegener, born Stölting

No. 32 Lückhauser Str. 49

Owners:

- 1901* Wilhelm Schürmann, master mason
- about 1930 Lina Schürmann, married Ernst Heuer from Wendlinghausen, founded
- 1949 The "Heidekrug", Gastwirthschaft (inn)
- 1995* (Owner: Wessel, in Lage)

No. 33 Hardisser Str. 113/Dilleweg 3

Owners:

- 1897* Friedrich Wächter from No. 14; in 1900, in addition, bought several land parcels from Röhr No. 3; 1901*: Fritz Wächter, Gastwirt/innkeeper
- 1954* Fritz Wächter, Bakery
- 1974* Henny Rieke, born Wächter
- 1997* Hard. Str. 113: Edith Rieke, married Jürgen Decker; Dilleweg 3: Erich Meier, "Hardisser Hof"

No. 34 Lückhauser Str. 1

Owners:

- 1901* Widow Emilie Vogt
- 1919* Gustav Voß, married Ernst Weege
- 1962* Else Voß, married Ernst Weege
- 1997* Rudolf and Anna Wächter

No. 35 Taschenweg 61

Owners:

- 1901* Heinrich Böger, brickmaker
- 1926* Heinrich Schröder
- 1974* Heinrich Schröder

No. 36 Taschenweg 67

Owners:

- 1901* Friedrich Watermann, brickmaker
- 1926* Widow Watermann, Friedrich Prante
- 1962* Friedrich Prante
- 1974* (Owner, Pauline Prante)

No. 38 Flurstr. 106

Owners:

1901* Bernhard Höveler, brickmaker
1926* Widow Johanne Höveler
1962* Wilhelm Höveler
1995* Gertrud Höveler, married Alfred Kreusel

No. 39 Taschenweg 83

Owners:

1901* August Koch, brickmaker
1926* August Koch, Sr. and Jr.
1962* August Hilker
1974* (Owner, Reinhold Hilker)

No. 40

Owners:

1901* Owner was the horse dealer, Meier, in Lage; living here was master mason, Fritz Kramer
1926* The house was rented out and was apparently, like Prante No. 41, relocated to Lage, in 1929. A few years later, still before the war, a new structure on Hudeweg 1 was given the house number 40
1954* Heinrich Helle
1997* Friedrich Helle



Fig. 183 Prante family in front of their house at Lemgoer Straße, 1916.

No. 41 (Lage, Lemgoer Str.)

Owners:

- 1907* The Stätte was already there; evidently it was established on land from Bökhaus
- 1919* Master mason, Friedrich Prante from Waddenhausen
- 1929 The house was relocated within the city of Lage proper²⁶⁵ farmstead number 41 was later reissued for the house at Dilleweg 17 (1962* Widow Laura Brinkmeyer)

No. 42 Hardisser Str. 79/81

Owners:

- 1905 established by Hermann Siek
- c. 1950 Wilhelm Siek
- 1995* Magdalene Siek, married Fritz Metting; Karin Siek, married Günter Metting

No. 43 Lückhauser Str. 24

Owners:

- about 1907 established by Gustav Kulemann
- 1926* Karl Kulemann
- 1974* Elfriede Kulemann, married Erich Fritz from Retzen



Fig. 184 The new residential area on Hudeweg, 1997.

From 1926 to the beginning of the war in 1939 there were no new houses, then another six houses went up at: Hudeweg 28 (Kampmeier), Taschenweg 75 (Redeker/Watermann), Flurstr. 108 (Gaus), Lückhauser Str. 21 (Kohlmeier) and Lückhauser Str. 23 (Voß), and also at Hudeweg 22 (Schling/Mieß).

The other houses in Hardissen were built after the war [1945]. During the period 1949/50, houses were built on several plots of land on the Hardissen moor. More houses were added to the row of houses on Lückhauser Straße (Bergmann, Herrmann, Krieger/Voß, Geschäft Helle/Helle shop), The “Rote Erde”/’Red Earth’ cooperative put up four structures on Hudeweg (Schaier, Gericke, Lange, Partzsch), and residences were also built on Herbergstraße (Kälble, Kruse, Bohle). Then followed the extensions to the residential streets with the names of “Dichter”/’poets’, that is ongoing: Hölderlin-Straße and Gebrüder-Grimm-Straße, Mommsenstraße and Fontanestraße.

In addition, free-standing buildings went up on Harsdörferstraße and Herbergstraße. In 1962, there were already 101 house numbers in Hardissen. And construction spanned the next few decade, and is ongoing, with most construction activity extending existing residential areas on these streets: Fontane, Hölderlin, Gebrüder Grimm [Grimm Brothers], and Lückhauser, as well as on Taschenweg.

Hauffstraße and Herderstraße, and Klaus-Groth-Weg and the major part of the Obernkamp are recent additions, and then finally Hermann-Hesse-Straße, Ingeborg-Bachmann-Straße and Kleistweg. Around Wilhelm-Raabe-Straße, Hardissen and Lage merge into one area. In the very recent period numerous multi-family/apartment units have been built on Hudeweg. Here and elsewhere in the newer residential areas of Hardissen, many more recent immigrants have found a new home.

Photo shots of village life



Figs.185/86 Vacationing guests enjoying a swim at the Bam farm in the 1920s.





Fig. 187 Hardissen's young people in front of the fire station, around 1936. Standing, left to right: August Wächter; Elfriede Naundorf, Heinrich Kampmeier, Henni Wind (born Krone), Erwin Kampmeier, Adelheid Naundorf, Fritz Krone, Fritz Wächter, Theodor Brand. Sitting, left to right: Adolf Fischer, Fritz Brink, Heinz Krone, Walter Krone, Rudi Wächter; 3rd from the right, Herbert Grabenmeier; furthest to the right, August Krone.

Fig. 188 The chestnut tree that stood by the village fountain is cut down and loaded on Kurt Freese; around 1956.





Fig. 189 Test of strength: Kurt Freese, underway, carrying a load weighing 3.5 centners [175 kilograms].

Fig. 190 The agreed-upon goal, the rail linesman's hut, was not quite reached.





Fig. 191 Pensive: Ex-mayor and innkeeper Heuer.

Appendix

Unpublished Documents

StA DT = Staatsarchiv Detmold (State Archives in Detmold)

- D 72 Krawinkel Krawinkels Nachlaß/Krawinkel's unpublished writings
- D 73 Kartensammlung/Map collection
- D 77 Brenker Genealogische Sammlung Brenker/Brenke Genealogical collection
- D 100 Detmold Detmold Kreisverwaltung/District administration
- L 1 E Urkunden/Documents
- L 12 Regierungsprotokolle/Government minutes
- L 20 Ortsakten Vogtei Heiden/Local records of the Heiden Vogtei
- L 61 Siebenjähriger Krieg/Seven Years' War
- L 67, 69 Kirchspiele/Parishes
- L 77 A Regierung/Government
- L 80 Ie Polizeiangelenheiten/Police matters
- L 80 III Schulabteilung (Konsistorium)/School department
- L 83 A, D Justizkanzlei/Office of Justice
- L 84 I Hofgericht/Court
- L 85 Geistliches Gericht/Ecclesiastical Court
- L 86 Kriminalgericht und Hexenprozesse/Criminal court and witch trials
- L 89 AI Gogericht [=Gaugericht]/district (Gau) Court
- L 92 C, N, T, W, Z Rentkammer/Bursary
- L 101 CI Amt Lage Salbücher/Register of landed possessions
- L 108 Amt Lage Amt Lage/Lage Amt-level records
- L 108 A Amts-/Eheprotokolle/Amt and marriage records
- L 109 Detmold Verwaltungsamt Detmold/Detmold administrative office
- L 112 A Kirchenbücher/Church [account] books

L 113 NSDAP-Kreisleitg. Detmold-Lemgo/NSDAP-District

Lippische Intelligenzblätter [= a Lippe newspaper]

Lippisches Landesmuseum, Detmold
Ortsakten/Local files/records

StA Lage = Stadtarchiv Lage/Lage city archives
Gemeindeprotokolle der Gemeinde Hardissen 1946-1969/Minutes of the Hardissen Gemeinde, 1946-1969

Protokolle von Gesprächen mit/records of conversations with:

August Blank (April 28, 1993), Friedrich Fischer (March 18, 1993), Heinrich Helle (March 23, 1993), Bruno Heuer (March 10, 1993), Otto Merrem (March 15, 1993)

Archiv der Schützengilde Lage (bei Herrn Erhard Kirchhof, Hagen)/ Archives of the Lage Marksmen's Guild (premises of Herr Erhard Kirchhof, Hagen)
Various records

Viewing of private document collections kindly allowed by the following people:

Herr Helmut Biere, Hardissen
Herr Karl-Ernst Bökhaus, Hardissen
Herr Wilhelm Brinkmeyer, Hardissen
Herr Friedrich Feger, Hardissen
Herr Rolf Kamphausen, Lage
Herr Erhard Kirchhof, Hagen
Herr Heinz Kreuzbusch, Hardissen
Herr Klaus Niebuhr, Hardissen
Prante Family, Lage
Herr Jobst-Werner Reese, Lückhausen
Röhr Family, Detmold

In addition, gratitude is extended to the many Hardissen citizens who provided oral history information.

Published Sources

Adreßbuch 1901 = Address records of the Lippe principality, Detmold, 1901

Adreßbuch 1926 = Address records of the Land of Lippe, Detmold, 1926

Adreßbuch 1962 = Lippe Land-Address records, Detmold and Lemgo Districts, 1962

Adreßbuch 1974 = Address records of the City of Lage, 1964, Detmold, 1974

Adreßbuch 1995 = Address records of the City of Lage, 1995, Detmold, 1995

Adreßbuch 1996/97 = Address records of the City of Lage, 1966/97, Detmold, 1996

Auswanderer = Emigrants from the Lippe principality (1878 to 1900), collected and edited by Fritz Verdenhalven, Bielefeld, 1995.

Burggraff e= Johann Henrich Burggraffe. Bielefeldische Stadt= Nachrichten/Bielefeld city reports (1720), in: 32. Jahresbericht des Historischen Vereins für the Ravensberg Grafschaft, Bielefeld, 198, 1-138.

Darpe = Einkünfte-und Lehns-Register/Income- and fief registry of the Herford *Fürstabtei* as well as *Heberollen* of the convent on the mountain near Herford, edited/arranged by Franz Darpe, Münster, 1892 (= Codex Traditionum Westfalicarum, Bd (vol. IV)

Hofkartenbetriebe/Making of farm maps = Aufstellung der Hofkartenbetriebe der Landwirtschaftsschule und Wirtschaftsberatungsstelle Blomberg mit Angabe des Besitzers oder Pächters, der Hausnummer und Größe in ha Kreis Detmold/Exhibit of farm-map making of the agricultural school and the economical advice center Blomberg, with information about owner or lessor, house/address number, and size in hectares, in the Detmold Kreis (district), in: Lippischer Dorfkalender (village almanac) 1953, 125-38.

LR = Lippische *Regesten*, arranged by Otto Preuß and August Falkmann, 4 vols., Lemgo, 1860, 1863, 1866. Detmold, 1868.

LR NF = Lippische *Regesten*, new series, arranged by Hans-Peter Wehlt, ed. by Herbert Stöwer and Hans-Peter Wehlt, Lemgo, 1989ff.

Ortschaftsverzeichnis = Ortschaftsverzeichnis des Fürstentums Lippe..., Detmold, 1906.

Pfarrerbericht/reports of the pastors = "Unter dem Volke und mit dem Volke gelebt..." / Among the people and living with the people: Die vertraulichen Berichte der Pfarrer an das Fürstlich Lippische Konsistorium 1840-1880/Trustworthy reports of the pastors to the Lippe principality consistorium, ed. by order the Lippe Landeskirche by Volker Wehrmann, Detmold 1988.

Ravensberger Urbar = Das Urbar [register of landed possessions] der Grafschaft Ravensberg von 1556, arranged by Franz Herberhold, vol. 1: Text, Münster, 1960.

Reisetagebücher der Fürstin Pauline = Eine Fürstin unterwegs. Reisetagebücher der Fürstin Pauline zur Lippe 1799-1818/A Princess Travelling: Travel journals of Princess Pauline of Lippe, arranged by Hermann Niebuhr, Detmold 1990.

Schadenverzeichnis = Das Schadensverzeichnis aus der Eversteinschen Fehde (c. 1409)/Registry of damages resulting from the Everstein Feud, arrangement and introductory remarks by Erich Sandow, in: Mitteilungen aus der lippischen Geschichte und Landeskunde 23 (1954), 52-107.

Stöwer = Die lippischen Landschatzregister von 1590 und 1618/Lippe treasury registers, arranged by Herbert Stöwer, Münster, 1964.

Stöwer/Verdenhalven = Salbücher der Grafschaft Lippe von 1614 bis etwa 1620/Demographics records of the Lippe Count's territory, arranged by Herbert Stöwer und Fritz Verdenhalven, Münster, 1969.

Verdenhalven = Die lippischen Landschatzregister von 1535, 1545, 1562, and 1572/Lippe treasury registers, arranged by Fritz Verdenhalven, Münster, 1971.

Literatur/Bibliography

Abbreviations

Lipp. Mitt. = Lippische Mitteilungen aus Geschichte und Landeskunde (bis 1947: Mitteilungen aus der lippischen Geschichte und Landeskunde)

- LZ = Lippische Landeszeitung/Lippe Land newspaper
 1873-1973 100 Jahre Schutz für Dich: Rückblick anlässlich der Hundertjahrfeier der Freiwilligen Feuerwehr – Löschzug Lage –vom 27.4. - 1.5.1973 /100 years of protecting you: Retrospective to celebrate the 100th anniversary of the volunteer fire department – Lage Fire Squad.
- Bartelt, Fritz, Sigrun Brunsiek, Sabine Klocke-Daffa, Landleben in Lippe, 1850-1950/Rural life in Lippe, vol. 1, Detmold, 1990
- Bechtel, Wolfgang, Niedermeyer zu Lückhausen [Stammfolge/lineage], Ms., o. J. = ohne Jahr, not dated
- Böger, Rolf. Die Geschichte der lippischen Wirtschaft/History of Lippe's economy, in: Erich Kittel, Heimatchronik des Kreises Lippe/Records of localities in the Lippe district, Köln 2nd edition, 1978, 393-431.
- Brand, Friedrich. Ländliche Siedlungen in Lippe – Gefüge und Struktur, Genese und Form/Rural settlements in Lippe – System and structure, genesis and form, in: Stadt und Dorf im Kreis Lippe in Landesforschung, Landespflege und Landesplanung: Vorträge auf der Jahrestagung der Geographischen Kommission für Westfalen in Lemgo/City and village in the Lippe district in land practice, land management, and land planning: Talks given at the annual meeting of the geographical commission for Westphalia in Lemgo. 1980 (Sonderveröff. (Special publication) des Lippischen Heimatbundes, aus: Spieker, Heft/Issue 28), Münster, 1981, 33-52.
- Burre, Wilhelm. Das Lippische Lehrer-Seminar/Lippe teachers' seminar. Detmold, 1925.
- Butterweck, Wilhelm. Die Geschichte der Lippischen Landeskirche/History of the Lippe State (Land) church, Schötmar, 1926.
- , Geschichte des Meierhofes zu Hölsen/History of the Hölsen farm complex [Meierhof] , Schötmar, 1921.
- Chronik des MSC Lage 1951 to 1991/Records of the Lage M[otor] S[port] C[lub], manuscript, [1991]
- Clauß, Günter, 225 Jahre der Lippischen Landes-Brandversicherungsanstalt/225 years of the Lippe 'fire protection association': From fire assurance to composite insurance provider, 1752-1977, ed. by the Lippe Landes-Brandversicherungsanstalt [Detmold, 1977]
- Dülmen, Richard van, Religion and Gesellschaft. Beiträge zu einer Religionsgeschichte der Neuzeit/Religion and society: Essays on the history of religion in modern times. Frankfurt/[am Main], 1989.
- Foster, George M, Peasant Society and the Image of Limited Good, in American Anthropologist 67 (1965), 293-315.
- Frank, Michael, Dörfliches Gesellschaft und Kriminalität. Das Fallbeispiel Lippe 1650-1800 Village social structure and criminality: Lippe, as case example, Paderborn 1995.
- Hennigs, Annette. Vom Hohlweg zum Chausseebau. Der lippische Straßen- und Wegebau vom 1750 bis 1820/From ravine to road construction: The construction of Lippe's highways and roadways, in: Neithard Bulst, Jochen Hoock, Wolfgang Kaiser (Eds.), Die Grafschaft Lippe im 18. Jahrhundert. Bevölkerung, Wirtschaft und Gesellschaft eines deutschen Kleinstaates/The territory of the Counts of Lippe in the 18th century: Population, economy, and society of a German small state. Bielefeld 1993, 199-220.
- Hohenschwert, Friedrich (Bearb[eiter]/.arrangement editor), Der Kreis Lippe. Teil I: Einführende Aufsätze/The Lippe district. Part I: Introductory essays. Stuttgart 1985 (= Führer zu archäologischen Denkmälern in Deutschland/Guide to archaeological monuments in Germany, Vol. 10)
- Hüls, Hans. Heiden in Lippe. Zur Genese und Struktur eines dörflichen Lebensraumes/On the genesis and structure of a village habitat, Detmold 1974.
- , Wähler und Wahlverhalten im Land Lippe während der Weimarer Republik/Voters and voting behavior in the State of Lippe during the Weimar Republic. Detmold, 1974.
- 100 Jahre Zucker aus Lage, 1883-1993/100 years of sugar from Lage [Festschrift/Special occasion publication]
- Kittel, Erich. Heimatchronik des Kreises Lippe/Local records of the Lippe district. Köln 2 [1978]
- Köhnen, Katharina. Wenn alles in Scherben fällt. Eine Kindheit im 3. Reich/When everything shatters to pieces: A childhood in the 3rd Reich. Lemgo, 1994.
- König, Walter (Bearb.). Festschrift zum 50jährigen Bestehen der Lippischen Hauptgenossenschaft/Festschrift in celebration of the 50th anniversary of the Lippe *Hauptgenossenschaft* (main cooperative), Lage, 1961.

Krawinkel, Heinrich August. Hof Bökhaus, Sonderdruck aus: Heimat und Welt (Beiblatt der Lippischen Volkszeitung)/The Bökhaus farm, a special printing from: Homeland and world (supplement of the Lippe *Volkszeitung*), 1932.

Linde, Roland. Die alten Höfe und Stätten/Old farms and small-scale farms, in Roland, Linde, Dankward von Reden (Hg./Ed.), Hillentrup. Kirchdorf und Bauerschaft/Hillentrup: Church village and farming community, Hillentrup, 1994, 369-423.

Lorenzen, Halke (Büro für Orts- und Landespflege/Local and regional management office). Untersuchung der Dorferneuerungsbedürftigkeit von zwölf Ortslagen der Stadt Lage/A look at the need for village-level renewal of 12 village units of the town of Lage. Blomberg-Istrup, 1991.

Meier, Burkhard. Dorfkirche Heiden. Ein Streifzug durch ihre Geschichte/The Heiden village church: A tour of its history. Lage, 1995.

Meier-Böke, August. Hardissen – Höfe im Hufeisen/Hardissen - Farms within the horseshoe, in: LZ 20.7.1957.

——, Heßloh – Siedlung für sich/Settlement for its own sake, in: LZ 16.4.1955.

Meier-Lemgo, Karl. Geschichte der Stadt Lemgo/History of the city of Lemgo, Lemgo 31981.

Meyer, Walter. Zur Geschichte des Uphofes/On the history of the Uphof (farm), in: Lipp. Mitt. 7 (1909), 1-46.

Normann, Julius. Herforder Chronik. Sagen und Geschichtsbilder aus der Vergangenheit von Stift und Stadt. Ein Beitrag zur Heimatkunde/Herford records: Legends and historical perspectives from convent and city of the past: A contribution to local area studies. Herford, 1910.

Peter, August Wilhelm. Lippe – Eine Heimat- und Landeskunde/Lippe – A local and regional study. Detmold 2nd edition, 1982.

Peters, Jan. Der Platz in der Kirche. Über soziales Rangdenken im Spätfeudalismus/One's seat in the church: On social structure attitudes in late feudalism, in: Jahrbuch für Volkskunde und Kulturgeschichte/= Yearbook of folklore and cultural history 28 (1985), 77-106.

Pfaff, Walter. Die Gemarkung Ohrsen in Lippe. Entwicklung und Gegenwartsbild einer ländlichen Siedlung, Ohrsen/The

area of Ohrsen in Lippe: Development and present-day perspective of a rural settlement, 1957.

Platenau, Fritz. Plattdeutsches Wörterbuch in Istruper Mundart/Dictionary of the Istrup Plattdeutsch dialect. Detmold, 1978.

Preuß, Otto. Die Lippischen Familiennamen mit Berücksichtigung der Ortsnamen/A look at Lippe surnames with focus on names of localities. Detmold 2nd edition, 1887 (Reprint Vadzuz/Liechtenstein, 1990)

Reineke, Friedrich, Stammbaum (= family tree) der Familie Niebuhr zu Hardissen. Manuscript, 1936/37.

——, Stammbaum der Familie Brinkmeyer zu Hardissen. Manuscript, 1937.

Rhiemeier, Günter. Hörstmar – Vom Urdorf zur ländlichen Wohngemeinde/Hörstmar – From primeval village to rural residential community/Hörstmar. Lemgo, 1989.

——, Trophagen. Gegenwart und Geschichte einer kleinen Hagensiedlung/Trophagen: Present and past of a small settlement in Hagen. Lemgo, 1991.

Rügge, Nicolas. Lüerdissen. Geschichte eines lippischen Dorfes/Lüerdissen: History of a Lippe village. [Lemgo-]Lüerdissen, 1994.

——, Kirchenordnungen und Konfessionalisierung. Lippe und Paderborn im Vergleich/Church Regulations and the making of denominations: A comparison of Lippe and Paderborn, in: Lipp. Mitt. 63 (1994), 9-26.

Schilling, Heinz. Konfessionskonflikt und Staatsbildung. Eine Fallstudie über das Verhältnis von religiösem und sozialem Wandel in der Frühneuzeit am Beispiel der Grafschaft Lippe/Denominational conflict and nation-building: A case study of the relationship between religious and social transition in Early Modern Times, using the Grafschaft of Lippe as an example. Gütersloh, 1981.

Schlumbohm, Jürgen. Lebensläufe, Familien, Höfe. Die Bauern und Heuerleute des Osnabrückischen Kirchspiels Belm in protoindustrieller Zeit, 1650-1860/Biographical sketches, families, farms: Farmers and the harvest folks in the Osnabrück parish of Belm in the proto-industrial period. Göttingen, 1994.

Starke, Fritz. Lieme. Eine ländliche Siedlung in Gegenwart und Vergangenheit/Lieme: A rural settlement in the present and the past/Lieme, Lemgo, 1972.

——, Die ZauberKinder von Lückhausen/Lückhausen's children of sorcery, in ev.ref. Kirchengemeinde Lieme. Informationen und Meinungen/Lieme's Reformed Church congregation: Information and opinions. Heft 66 (Dez 1982), 10-15; Heft 67 (März 1983), 10-15.

——Aus der Geschichte des Hofes Niedermeyer zu Lückhausen (Hardissen No. 1)/From the history of the Niedermeyer farm at Lückhausen, in eVol.[= ibid.], Heft 82 (Aug, 1985), 5-10.

——, Der Hof Tasche zu Lückhausen, Hardissen No. 8, in eVol., Heft 94 (Sept 1987), 13-19.

Starke, Willi. Die Flurnamen der Gemarkungen Lieme und Hardissen/Farmland names of the land expanses/districts of Lieme and Hardissen, (Masch. Mskr/typed ms.) [Detmold 1949]

Steinbach, Peter. Lippische Kommunalverwaltung im 19. Jahrhundert. Bemerkungen zur Tagung der Sektion 'Kommunalgeschichte' auf dem Deutschen Historikertag in Köln, April 1970/Lippe municipal administration in the 19th century: Comments from the 'municipal history' section meeting at the German historians' conference, in: Lipp. Mitt. 42 (1973), 58-90.

——, Der Eintritt Lippes in das Industriezeitalter. Sozialstruktur und Industrialisierung des Fürstentums Lippe im 19. Jahrhundert/Lippe's entrance into the industrial age: Social structure and industrialization of the principality of Lippe in the 19th century. Lemgo 1976.

Stöwer, Herbert. Die Familie von Kerßenbrock. Mit besonderer Berücksichtigung der lippischen Linien/The von Kerßenbrock family: With special focus on the Lippe lineage, in: Lipp. Mitt. 27 (1958), 162-85.

——, 125 Jahre Selbstverwaltung im ländlichen Bereich/125 years of self-government in the rural regions, in: Heimatland Lippe 60 (1967), 10-16.

Süvern, Wilhelm. Brake. Geschichte des Schlosses und der Gemeinde Brake in Lippe/Brake: History of the Brake castle and community in Lippe. Lemgo, 1960.

——, (Hg. = Ed.), Letzter Wille und Lebenslauf des Grafen Otto zur Lippe-Brake vom Jahre 1636/Last testament/will and biographical sketch of Count Otto of Lippe-Brake from 1636, in: Lipp. Mitt. 30 (1961), 134-44.

——, Das Kirchspiel Hohenhausen/Hohenhausen parish, Lemgo, 1965.

Walg, Rainer. Hexenglaube und magische Kommunikation im Dorf der frühen Neuzeit. Die Verfolgungen in der Grafschaft Lippe/Belief in witches and the communication via sorcery in the village in Early Modern Times: Persecution in the territory of the Count of Lippe, Paderborn, 1993.

——, Kinder in Hexenprozessen. Die Grafschaft Lippe, 1654-1663/Children in the witch trials: Territory of the Count of Lippe, in: Gisela Wilbertz, Gerd Schwerhoff, Jürgen Scheffler (Hg./Eds.), Hexenverfolgung und Regionalgeschichte. Die Grafschaft Lippe im Vergleich/Persecution of witches and regional history: A comparative study of the territory of the Count of Lippe. Bielefeld, 1994, 211-31.

Wehrmann, Volker (Bearb.). Lippe im Dritten Reich. Die Erziehung zum Nationalsozialismus. Eine Dokumentation, 1933-1939/Lippe in the Third Reich: A documentation of the education into National Socialism. Detmold, 1984.

Weiß, Erich. Zur geschichtlichen Entwicklung des ländlichen Bodenordnungsrechts im lippischen Landesteil Nordrhein-Westfalens/On the historical development of agricultural land use legal regulation in the Lippe region of Nordrhein-Westfalen, in: Lipp. Mitt. 59 (1990), 171-269.

20 Jahre Fortuna Lage v. 1969 e.V./Twenty years of the incorporation [in 1969] of [the sports/soccer club] *Fortuna Lage*. [Festschrift; Vervielfältigung/photo copy].

Figures and Colorplates Sources: Private and Public

Bam: Photo No. 44, 55, 171
Billerbeck: 129-30
Bohle: 98, 103-104a, 110, 122-23, 125-26, 191
Bökhäus: 31, 34, 53, 111, 133-36, 143, 154-56
Brandsmeier: 109, 173
Brink: 54, 57, 120, 178, 187
Brinkmeyer: 4, 24, 39-40, 50-51, 63, 77-78, 105, 114-15, 165, 168-70, Color Plate 5-20
Brüggemann: 174
Ellerkamp: 30
Feger: 21a, 38, 72-76, 96, 109b, 137-38, 162-62a
Fischer: 32, 37, 45, 47, 95, 116-17, 144-45, 147-51, 176-77, 185-86, 188-90.
Fritz: 131
Gabriel: 124, 127
Gemeinde Hardissen: 113
Glitt: 65
Grabenmeier: 93, 97, 99, 101-102
Hebrok: 132
Helle: 64, 112
Herrmann: 23a
Hesterbrink: 10-14, 180, 184
Heuer: 62
Kreuzbusch: 25-26
Lippische Landeszeitung: 142
Lippische Rundschau: 68
Lippisches Landesmuseum: 1
Motorsportclub Lage e.V.: 139-141
Meier: Color Plate 4
Menze: 100, 179
Niebuhr: 27, 33, 35, 48-49, 58, 163-64
Oberkrome-Tasche: 36, 52, 166
Pfaff: 2-3, 19, 76a, 104b-3, 161, Color plate 1-3
Prante: 108, 183
Reese: 22, 27a-c, 2a, 42-43, 46, 53a, 118, 167
Reinhard: 28-29, 41
Rieke: 60, 119 181
Röhr: 4, 56, 107, 143a, 157-58
Rügge: 6a
Schmidt: 146, 172

Schützengilde Lage: 106
Schwintzer: 128
Seelig: 160
SpVg Hagen-Hardissen: 121
Staatsarchiv Detmold: 5-6, 8, 9, 15-18, 20-21, 23, 66-67, 69-71, 92, 94
Stadtarchiv/Landesgeschichtliche Bibliothek Bielefeld: 7
Stratemeier: 59, 109a, 152
Wächter: 79-91, 175, 182
Wunsch: 159

Footnotes

[Dr. Rügge's] *Guide to Reading the Footnotes*: In order to keep the footnote reference information from taking up too much room, the full title is not repeated after its first appearance. Given the primary and secondary sources listed, identifying the source (by the shortened version) is easily done, and the abbreviations of the archival and primary sources are also given throughout.

* Private donations are put in alphabetical order; institutions are not.

Trans.: additional information about German abbr./notations used in bibliographical citations:

Vgl. = Vergleich = cf. = confer (i.e. compare this information with information found on the page/s that follows the "cf.")

page number plus "f." or "ff." - use the same way in German as in English. ; e.g., if information/section referenced starts on p. 46 and runs onto p. 47, then 46f. is noted; if the information starts on p. 46 and relevant forms of it continue across several pages, you'll see "p. 46 ff."

u. a. = unter anderen/ among others

u. ä. = und Ähnliches/and the like/and similar

u.ö. und öfter/cited frequently

z. B. = zum Beispiel = e.g., = f or example

o.gen. ober genannt/ named above

s. o. = siehe oben/see above

s. u. = siehe unten = see below

ders./the same

lt = laut = according to/per

D. = Seite = page

Leaf = Blatt = page (in a manuscript, folio, newspaper, e.g.,)

Bd = Band = volume (in a journal or book, e.g.)

Heft = if used after Band, usually means "issue"; can mean "notebook"

Fach: can be compartment or a shelf, depending upon the archival storage system

eVol. = *ibid* = Latin "in the same place"; i.e., is the same reference source as the previous one.

[*Trans.* I have not put quotation marks around the footnote material provided by Dr. Nicolas Rügge, but I have provided English equivalents of his comments, to the best of my ability, again, using [?] to distinguish them from a "?" mark or "!" that Dr. Rügge used in his book.]

1 Information about the archaeological finds comes from local records at the Lippe *Landesmuseum* and was mainly obtained via searches done by Frau Ingeborg Krehbiel-Gräther. For the finds at Lückhausen cf. the contributions of Helmut Luley, Hans-Otto Pollmann and Achim Kass in the *Landesmuseum*'s 'New Years' Greeting', 1992-1994. Dr. Rügge expresses his gratitude to Dr. Elke Treude for making available and for interpreting the documents and for going through texts. For this section, cf. also Lorenzen, *Untersuchung*, 121; Hohenschwert (Bearb.), *Der Kreis Lippe I*.

2 Information kindly provided by Herrn Walter Pfaff, Hagen. The next section contains more about the Telchhofe (farm), which in Early Modern Times was part of the Tasche farm.

3 Cf., mention of 'Butdenhuson' (Pottenhausen) occurs by 900: Brand, *Ländliche Siedlungen*, 38.

4 Lippe *Landesmuseum*, Ortsakten/files. In 1936, the teacher, Grabenmeier, found, in Hardissen, 'grave shard' from the 14th century: in the "Röhrsiek", a marshy meadow, indicating the settlement had apparently been located somewhat higher up. (*ibid.*)

5 Preuß, *Familiennamen*, 46f.

6 For the settlement history of Lippe cf. as an example Pfaff, *Gemarkung Ohrsen, Hüls, Heiden*.

7 Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 1f. as quoted in LR NF 1486.01.05(= LR2700). Also, in the 1644 *Salbuch*, the Simon Bökhaus entry mentions a fortress (Burgh) at the farm. (m. E. = meines Erachten = [Dr. Rügge's opinion] is that the existence of this castle contradicts Krawinkel's assumption that the Bökhaus farm may originally have been within the village settlement, because the farm acquired property in the mixed crop land (Gemengelage) of the Hardissen lands being farmed.

8 Cf. Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 3. That Lukebart had pasturing right on the Lage moorland, which meant his area was sur-

rounded by Bökhaus land, could indicate that earlier the two farms were one farm.

9 Darpe, 8. Another manuscript from the 12th century shows 'Herderhusun' (ibid, 24).

10 Salbuch 1644: L101 C1, Amt Lage, No. 4, p. 156. All signatures in the following, unless otherwise noted, refer to holdings of the Staatarchiv (national archive) in Detmold. The quoted parts of the source documents are *italicized* [*kur-siv*]. So as not to make it unnecessarily difficult to comprehend, the writing style was, in part, carefully modernized, mainly in punctuation, compounding of words, and capitalization.

11 Darpe, 24. Probably incorrect is the information in Normann, Herforder Chronik, where a farm in Hardissen is said to have also been part of the main farm (Haupthof) in Vennethe (Vinnen): According to Darpe 27, this farm was in *Herderdehusun*, and according to a 1333 catalogue/index, this place name might have turned into Herringhausen (Hederinchusen) and not Hardissen (ibid, 101).

12 Ibid., 115. Hermann's Land 'achter der Schuren' in the meantime came into the possession of Johann Veger and his son, Arnold.

13 'Arn. Nyenburich opidanus in Lemgo' in 1361 had property in Herderdissen (Darpe, 198): Johann Nyebur (inch) is named in 1394 as having property 'des Hezekers hove in Herdissen', there then followed, in 1402, Hermann N., and after his resignation 1406 ff., Mannich/Manning, citizen of Lemgo (ibid, 212, 218, 222, 225).

14 In 1361, Hermann de Went van Valkenberg was enfeoffed with his estate possessions in Hardissen (Darpe, 196, u.ö.). From the 14th century, there is evidence that families with fief estates in Hardissen were named after their property (or according to their ancestry?), as 'von Hardissen' (de Herdissen), as, among others, a citizen of Lemgo, who had income from two places (in Hardissen) (Darpe, 173f., 197 u.ö., numerous places, cf. also numerous references in the LRNF). Not certain is the position of a widow 'de Herdissen' from the 13th century, sister of Albertus or Albragt, who also paid for the estate of a Helmoldus Bruno (ibid, 73)

15 According to Starke, Lieme, 140, the Feger farm was first owned by the von Quaditz family, who also had the Bülling-

hausen *Amt*, but their impoverishment around 1500 meant they had to sell the farm.

16 Darpe, 234, 250, 256, frequently cited, cf. LRNF 1443.1016, 1453.06.12, 1482.10.15 u.ö.; Starke, Lieme, 110.

17 According to the 1644 Salbuch, his father, Dieterich Kothman of Lemgo, had joint rights: appointed in 1726 as lord of the manor was Ernst Friedrich Cothmann in Lemgo, the son of the 'sorcerer mayor' ["Hexenbürgermeister"] (L69, No. 202Leaf 24f.).

18 LRNF 1443.10.15: Squire Wilhelm Westphal sold a house and a small farm holding (Hofstätte) in Hardissen in the Heiden Parish to Johann Cathemann and his wife Frau Jutta for 700 fl. Rhein. [florin of the Rhineland]. The house and Stätte were part of Westphal's estate properties that were unencumbered by fees and leases; and he sold them a Kotten (small place) from off the estate as well that he had bought from Rembert von Quernheim and his sons; cf. Schilling, Konfessionskonflikt, 275 f.

19 Darpe, 243; LR 1750: by 1491, Bertold de Swarte of Detmold is enfeoffed by Bern(har)d of Lippe with a[nother] farm at 'Hertessen', LR 2291: In 1465, Bürgermeister Joh. Cotte-man in Lemgo buys a grain tax (Korngülte) from the farm. In the *Schadenregister* (list of damages) from around 1409, the shepherd is noted as a neighbor of the 'Meyers von Bodekenhus' (Bökhaus); thus, from the perspective of today's settlements, he most likely was part of the Lükebart farm. He, however, may have been listed in the index as *Honderbat*. More cause for confusion occurs given that the two shepherds mentioned (one of them having lost sheep) are not necessarily one in the same (see below). What could have been meant by Bökhaus' neighbor is the Fellensiek farm that sometimes was included in the Hardissen Bauerschaft, but mainly is not found in the fief records of Herford.

20 Schadenverzeichnis, 79f. Partially translated Middle-High German text: de meyger (Meier/tenant-farmer) van dem Bodekenhus II perde (horses), de he achtet up (reckoned at) XX mar[k]; dem Schepere, synem nabere, nemen de Wende in eynem koften vrede VIII coyg. XIII swyn unde XVII schap (sheep), dat he actet up XX mar[k]; [still the same, ?] dem Schepere to Hardersen nemen de Wende in gudem vrede V perde unde ander gut (horses and other possessions), dat he

achtet up XX mar[k]...Bringman to Hardersen II perde III koyg, he sulven ghevangen unde gheplundert (captured and plundered). Den schaden achtet he up XXX mar[k] ... Honderbat III perde unde ander schade, den he achtet up XXX mar[k]; de meyger van Ludichusen in brande unde in queke, dat ome de van Heruorde deden in koftem vrede, LIII mar[k].

21 LR 974 (noted incorrectly there as “Lüdenhausen” - for first reference in 1354 cf. also Starke, Niedermeyer, 5.

22 Friedrich von Callendorp estates at ‘Lüdinchusen’ is mentioned in 1380 (LR 1297 = LR NF 1380.05.02: [mention] of ‘Ludinhusen’ on the Bega in Ksp = Kirchspiel (parish) of ‘Heden’, at the meierhof ‘Laghemans’ House, the ‘Stukenland’, the Mühlenland (mill land) and the Fischerkotten. In 1408, the Meierhof of ‘Lüdinchusen’ is noted again (LR 1682 f.).

23 Cf. above, and Starke, Niedermeyer, 5.

24 L1 VII 9 No. 4, LR 1593. With proceeds from mortgaging the farm to the Lemgo citizen, Siefried von Horn, Heinrich cancels out his debt to his cousin, Friedrich. - Starke dates the dividing up of the farm that same year, 1403, but no source can be found to verify this (possibly a false assumption caused by there being a mortgaging of another half of the farm, in the above-named document?)

25 L1 VII 9 No. 6 (1428). The Vogtei (protectorate) over the upper farm is transferred from Johan Ployß to Johan Cruse of Lemgo.

26 *ibid.*, No.9. In 1439, Helmich de Kremer, Lemgo citizen, confirms it that after he and his wife die, the lower farm (Niedern Hof) at Ludinghausen should again revert to the Wende (family) (according to the Findbuch Knoch). For more on the von Callendorp and [de] Wende families (with family trees), cf. Süvern, Kirchspiel Hohenhausen, 35-48.

27 Cf. LR 1125 = LR NF 1365.02.18: Hermann de Wend[t]’s farm, named Falkenberg, at Lüdinchusen; LR 1169: 1367 corresponding to Lüdechusen = LR NR 1367.05.01: ‘Luodehusen’, the farm, that ‘Radhard’ sits on (!). Also, Hermann and his father, Hinrich, a knight in Vlotho, got an estate as a fief from the Abbey in the 14th century. See Darpe, 165, 196 and other pages.

28 LR NF 1496.05.22: In 1496, the nobleman Bernhard (VII) of Lippe and his sons let the Vogt (= steward of the protectora-

te), Kersten Kleynsorge, redeem their upper farm in Ludinchusen in the Heiden parish from Johann Deigese, a Paderborn citizen, whose ancestors had gotten it by decree from Simon and Otto of Lippe.

29 Cf. Starke, Niedermeyer, 6; Obermeier 5, Tasche, 13. The family of Niedermeyer was “leibfrei”(not bound serfs). Cordt Niedermeyer paid a Weinkauf to the Wend family in 1539.

30 L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 4, Bd II. Leaf 2 According to Starke, Tasche 16, the v[on] Kleinsorge family sold the farm in 1724 to the Regierungs President of Lippe, v. Piderit; after his death, Lieutenant-General (German = General-Lieutenant) v. Losberg inherited it, who later traded it to the sovereign (Landesherr); for details of the 1773 agreement, *ibid.*, 17.

31 L92 T1 Tit. 26, No. 4, Bd II. 131.4, 4f. With the “Telchhove” of Hardissen in Par[ochia]-Kirchspiel (parish). By 1498, ‘Heyden’ had been enfeoffed to the Lemgo citizen, Christianus Kleynsorge by the Herford Abbey. (Darpe, 291 = LR NF 1498.06.07), who soon thereafter also inherited the Tasche farm. It is evidently not the case that Tasche did not start leasing the Telch farm from the Abbey until the 17th century (as Starke has it in Tasche, 14).

32 Cf. Starke, Niedermeyer, 6, 8. In 1748, Niedermeyer was still successfully protecting his fishing rights against the estate’s tenant/leaseholder, Voigt of Büllinghausen - About the Oeternbach, cf. L 101 C 1, Amt Lage, No. 15, 100f.

33 When the sovereign was not also the manorial lord, the Meierbriefe were often in use quite a long time: cf. L 92T1Tit.26 No. 4 Vol. II (Tasche of Lückhausen, serf of the Kleinsorge family, dwelling in the city of Lemgo).

34 Darpe, 342 (still just these two farms also in the 16th century) and 353 (1802). The estate over the years was likewise transitioned back to the sovereign territory administration (Weinkauf was paid to it), whereas in the 1528 Salbuch, in the case of both farms, the property is shown to belong to the abbess at Herford.

35 L 101 C1, Amt Lage, No. 2. An even older agreement in 1528 only lists the lord-serf relationships and the service obligations.

36 L 92 Z II No. 2, S. 7, No. 4 S. 87.

37 The Salbuch entries of the Hardissen Bauerschaft are found in: L 101 C 1, Amt Lage, No. 4, p. 39-46 (about 1617; copies to be found in “Stöwer/Verdenhalven, p. 84-86): *ibid.*, p. 151-64 (1644); *ibid.*, No. 18, p. 405 ff. (1781).

38 L 101 C 1, Amt Lage, No. 42, p. 3324.

39 Copy of the *Freibrief* (redemption letter) quoted in D 72 Krawinkel No. 2, Bökhaus VIII. In 16th-century Bielefeld, the Densingk family, Densken and similar turn up in numerous positions [council members, mayors, judicial assessors]; cf. Ravensberg Urbar, p. 105, Anm[erkungen] = footnote, 152; Burggraffe, 4, 8, 102.

40 Cf. Starke, Niedermeyer, 7f.

41 Document in private possession of the Röhr family, Detmold. In the 1617 Salbuch, there is a partial “Freikauf”-evidently added later – Churdt Roher, free, Pachtkorn (grain tax) and Spanndienst (providing team/teamster) from the *Cotmans* [footnote: *Dieses hat der Meyer bey den Hof gekauft laut daruber erhalten Kaufbriefes*] and from the convent in Lemgo (Stöwer/Verdenhalven, p. 86). In 1781, Röhr is still paying the Weinkauf to the convent in Lemgo. By about 1610, half of the farm had been redeemed from the Cothmanns. (Everth Gerkhingkh, citizen in Lemgo./Cordt Rhor of Hardissen: L 20 no. 37 Leaf 365). Henrich Röher writes in 1666 that it has been a year since lease/rent and services had been sold by Cothmann to Raab de Wrede (L 20 No. 37 Leaf 370f.).

42 L 20 No. 53, Leaf 59.

43 L 89 A I No. 111 Leaf 326 (Tappe, as owner of a small farm, one half Taler, the rest, a whole Taler.).

44 L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 4 Vol. II Leaf 22v (Tasche, 1619).

45 L 89 A I No. 105 Leaf 260v (Tappe); *ibid.*, No. 106 Leaf 177 (Feger and Obermeier); *ibid.*, No. 106 Leaf 254 (Obermeyer 1629).

46 For services [owed by a] Halbspänner [farmer with half a team], cf. the formulation already found in the 1528 *Salbuch* (here, re: Feger): *deinth alle wecken myth einer haluen ploich* (provides work service each week with half a plow [team]).

48 Cf. L 101 C 1, Amt Lage, No. 15, p. 100.

49 There was apparently still an obligation to pay a *Zehnte* (tithe, in grain) in 1600, cf. L 20 No. 55. In the 1617 *Salbuch*,

there is no longer mention of it. In 1770, we read: *Die Lückhauser drey meyers wären vom Zehnten frey!* the three Lückhausen Meiers were not under obligation to provide the Zehnte[n]. (L 101 C 1, Amt Lage, No. 15, p. 99).

50 Cf. LR NF 1434.03.21. Brothers Johann and Cort von Möllenbeck mortgage two thirds of the Zehnte (tithe paid in grain), at ‘Hardessen’ to Lemgo Mayor, Johann den Crusen and his wife (from folder of copies of Kerßenbrock documents. Apparently, the small part of the rights held by the Cruse family went to their Cothmann descendants and a large part of the rights went to the Kerßenbrocks, who inherited the big section of the extensive Möllenbeck estate holdings. (cf. Stöwer, Die Familie von Kerßenbrock).

51 . L 83 A, 10 K 96, quote. Vol. I, Leap 385v (as per the report of Meyer, the *Amtsvoigt*). Cf. for older disputes, L 20 No. 38.

52 Cf. in addition to other accounts (L 92 Z) those treasury indexes edited by Verdenhalven (1535-72) and Stöwer (1590 and 1618).

53 Cf. the Salbuch from around 1616/17: Stöwer/Verdenhalven, p. 182, No. 1507.

54 Die Begriffe/concepts, per Wunder, Bäuerliche Gemeinde.

55 L 89 A I No. 112, Leap 61v. On the other hand, the Hardissen farmers, jointly, had one cattle herdsman. *Ibid.*, No. 116, Leaf 178 (1714).

56 *Ibid.*, No. 117 Leaf 177.

57 *Ibid.*, No. 114 Leaf 18v.

58 This is mainly a result of the work of Frank, Dörfliche Gesellschaft (about Heiden).

59 Very similar archaeological finds were also discovered in other places in Lippe: Cf. Linde, Die alten Höfe, 395; Rügge, Lüerdissen, 58.

60 Reisetagebücher der Fürstin Pauline, 172. Dr. Rügge expresses gratitude to Herrn Walter Pfaff of Hagen for making him aware of this quoted passage.

61 As found in Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 3. For extension of the street, cf. D 100 Detmold No. 1281; L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 5 (Ceding of land from Simon Brüggemann No. 12 and Hermann Werning No. 16 for building of the Hardissen-to-Lage Kommunalweg [local road]).

- 62 For information on the roads, cf. L 101 C1, Amt Lage, No. 15, p. 108; L 77A No. 8443, *ibid.*, No. 4161 Leaf 7; Hennigs, Vom Hohlweg zum Chausseebau, Meier-Lemgo, Geschichte der Stadt Lemgo, 10. Mapes: Friemelsche Karte: “die Graffschaft Lippe in ihren richtigen Grentzen...” from Heimbürg, around 1755.
- 63 Cf., Darpe, 165, and other pages.
- 64 Cf., Starke, Lieme, 140 f.
- 65 L 89 A I No. 109 Leaf 105 (Michaelis 1643); *ibid.*, No. 116 Leaf 127v(1713). On mill services/obligations, cf. also L 92 C Tit.20 No. 1, 4 and 6.
- 66 Cf., Starke, Lieme, 139, 145.
- 67 As found in D 72 Krawinkel No. 2, Bökhaus VI.
- 68 Cf., Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 4.
- 69 He names, among others, Wilhelm Feger in Herford and his Brother in East Indies: L 20 No. 37 Leaf 205.
- 70 L 89 A I No. 105 Leaf 337v.
- 71 L 20 No. 37 Leaves 13-17. Cf. D 72 Krawinkel No. 2, Bökhaus V; Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 4; Jobst later moved to Lage; the son, as his grandfather before him, became a master tailor there.
- 72 For a discussion of this method of exchanging ownership/possession, often neglected, cf. also Schlumbohm, Lebensläufe, 451-79, especially 479.
- 73 L 20 No. 37 Leaf 36, 47 f.; Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 3,5.
- 74 L 89 A I No. 10 Leaf 39 (Bökhaus, Ostern/Eastern 1605); *ibid.*, No. 109 Leaf 289v (Niedermeyer, Michaelis/Michaelmas 1648); *ibid.*, No. 115 Leaf 174v (Feger, Michaelis 1704)
- 75 L 108 A No. 136 Leaf 15.
- 76 L 89 A I No. 115 Leaf 35 (Ostern 1701).
- 77 L 85 No. 210.
- 78 L 89 A I No. 113 Laf 75 (not dated, possibly 1682).
- 79 *Ibid.*, No. 114 Leaf 3 (1690).
- 80 Cf. Meyer, Geschichte des Uphofes, 24-26; L 85 No. 1959.
- 81 L 20 No. 37 Leaf 321ff., especially 321f. (Writing of the elderly Hans Niebuhr), 325 f. (Writing of Niebuhr’s wife), quoted from p. 325.
- 82 L 89 A I No. 116 Leaf 230v.
- 83 Cf. The files on the *Elokation* [= renting out the farm to someone other than the tenant-owner] Records regarding Niebuhr, 1758-1803: L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 3, 5 volumes. An *Elokation* in Luhe in the late 18th century likewise concerned a farm that had comparatively poor ownership rights: cf., Rügge, Lüerdissen, 62-66.
- 84 L 89 A I No. 122 Leaf 6v, 9 (1784), Leaf 105v (1786/87). Threatened punishment in prison might have had something to do with his fleeing.
- 85 Announcement of the Consistorium of the Lippe principality of July 23, 1793, in Lippische Intelligenzblätter 1793, p. 370f.
- 86 L 108 A No. 133, p. 753a (June 4, 1659).
- 87 L 89 A I No. 112 Leaf 230 (Tappe); *ibid.*, No 115 Leaf 273 (Obermeyer).
- 88 Walz, Hexenglaube, emphasizes this moment of “Agonalen” (rivalry).
- 89 Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 5.
- 90 Cf. Foster, Peasant society.
- 91 Cf. about the disputes, in general, that came before the Gogericht: Frank, Dörfliche Gesellschaft, 172 ff., where the sources for the Heiden district are analyzed. The samples from Hardissen can be found, among other places, in L 89 A I No. 110 Leaf 325 (Michaelis 1659; especially many complaints having to do with sheep-raising/farming. *Ibid.*, No. 107 Leaf 326 (Eichenfällen = cases about felling oak trees [without permission]); *ibid.*, No. 111 Leaf 129 f. (Michaelis 1664: Sepp/Röer and Niebuhr/Feger’s farmhand).
- 92 *Ibid.*, No. 105 Leaf 272v (Ostern 1617; fine of 3 Talers).
- 93 *Ibid.*, Leaf 282.
- 94 L 89 A I No. 111 Leaf 102 (Lukebart, 1664; fine of 1 Taler and paid for *das artzlohn* /the doctor’s fee); *ibid.*, No. 107 Leaf 377v (Niebursche/Feger; fine of 1 Gulden and paid the doctor’s fee); L 20 No. 37 Leaf 159 (Brüggemann, 1741).
- 95 L 20 No. 37 Leaves 148-50; she was still noted in 1672 as being *eine ganz lahme uff Krücken gehende fraw*/a very lame woman who uses crutches (L 89 A No. 112 Leaf 166).

Gratitude is extended to Frau Dr. Gisela Wilbertz, Lemgo, for the information about the executioners.

96 Cf. Walz, Hexenglaube.

97 Meier-Böke, Heßloh

98 Platenau, Plattdeutsches Wörterbuch, 46. Cf. for discussion of these problems, van Dülmen, Religion und Gesellschaft, 50 ff., 204 ff.

99 L 86 (Hexenprozesse) H 12, quoted from Leaf 2. According to the title of the index to the extant rest of the files, consisting of only two documents, she was executed; in the text there is nothing about it.

100 Cf. Starke, Zauberkinder; Walz, Kinder in Hexenprozessen, 21, 229; Meier-Lemgo, Geschichte der Stadt Lemgo, 170f.

101 L 20 No. 37 Leaf 76.

102 D 72 Krawinkel No. 2, Bökhaus III; quote: L 84 I, p. 313, Leaf 46r/v (Ja, wenn.../Yes, if...), 55 v (Holländische Tonnen Goldes/Ton of Dutch gold), 56v (*es seye dann daß ein Baur einen patricium agiren, oder wie ein vornehmer Edelmann ... leben will, oder auch ein Baurenweib den Kuhstall und die Mistgrube vorbezytreten mit weißen schmiedigen Schuhen wie eine Adelige Frau geputzt uffzutreten gewohnt ist [trans.: see chapter for translation]. Cf. Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 6.*

103 L 89 A I No. 121 Leaf 190v.

104 L 101 C 1, Amt Lage, No. 18, p. 30: Heiden 2800 Reichstaler, Hardissen 2500, Hörstmar 1840, Heßloh 1158, Trophagen 465 ... (total: 16,394).

105 L 20 No. 37 Leaf 246ff. (c. 1739 to Michaelis 1745); cf. L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 2 (concerning Held 1738-67). The last documented *Elokation* happened from 1805 to 1817 (for 2 lease periods) to the Tasche farm, caused by bad management of the Interim farm manager, Lambracht: Starke, Tasche, 18; cf. L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 4, 5 vols., 1512-1880.

106 Cf. Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 6

107 L 20 No. 53 Leaves 32-35, quote from 32.

108 U. a. bei ihnen wurden anlässlich einer Kontrolle falsche Haspeln gefunden/In their case, and in others, under scrutiny, false reels (i.e., of irregular measure) were discovered: L 89 A I No. 105 Leaf 22.

109 L 89 A I No. 110 Leaf 376v (Ostern 1658).

110 L 92 Z IV No. 31, p. 142-45.

111 L 89 A I No. 105 Leaf 349 (Ostern 1628).

112 L 92 Z IV No. 12 p. 73, 174 f/g, 249 f.

113 L 92 Z IV No. 31 p. 142-45; *ibid.*, No. 34 p. 358f.; *ibid.*, No. 35 p. 160.

114 Ortschaftsverzeichnis (Hardissen: p. 48f.).

115 *Ibid.*, Adressbücher/Lists of addresses; StA Lage, Gemeindeprotokoll May 3, 1960; Lippe Rundschau and LZ April 21, 1989, LZ August 7, 1989 (according to private documents of Biere).

116 Cf. mainly the sources named in the previous footnotes; L 92 Z IV No. 29, p. 233-36 (1609); LZ March 11, 1997. Probably incorrect is the information contained in the *Gemeinde* minutes of May 5, 1957, that the *Gemeinde* had at the time 645 residents (?).

117 Cf. D 72 Krawinkel No. 2, Bökhaus VII; Krawinkel, Bökhaus VII; Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 2-6.

118 Private documents, Bökhaus.

119 L 101 C 1, Amt Lage, No. 15, p. 101 ff.; *ibid.*, No. 18, p. 407-11; cf. Starke, Lieme, 77, 108; Starke, Niedermeyer, 9; Starke, Obermeier, 8.

120 L 92 Z IV No. 31 p. 142-45

121 L 92 Z IV No. 12 p. 174f/g

122 Documented mainly in the Gogericht records (L 89 A I No. 122 Leaf 35 v, among others) and in the local records (L 20 No. 37 Leaf 77ff, among others) e.g., 1679-81, the dispute between Brink Henrich and Bartold Röhr, as well as, 1770, because of Feger's rights.

123 L 101 C 1, Amt Lage, No 18, p. 407f.; 89 A No. 122 Leaf 35v (1785).

124 L 101 C 1, Amt Lage, No. 18, p. 409.

125 L 92 Z IV NO. 31, p. 142-45.

126 L 89 A I No. 105 Leaf 355 v (Michaelis 1633/Mi[chaelis] 1634).

127 Cf. L 77 A No. 4160, 4161, 8454; L 108 Amt Lage Compartment 3 No. 14 and No. 23. Feger quote from L 77 A No. 4161 Leaf 24.

- 128 Cf. private documents, Reese (about division of the Lückhausen moor 1839/40); Starke, Tasche, 19; Starke, Niedermeyer, 9; Map by K. Overbeck of the divided Lückhausen moor = D 73 Tit. 4 No. 5418.
- 129 Cf. L 92 W Tit. III No. 8; Starke, Niedermeyer, 9; Krawinkel, Hof Bökhaus, 7, and private documents, Bökhaus (Bökhaus, Hardissen Zehnt/grain tithes). The dividing up of the common land of Lippe and *Ablösungen* [redemptions] in Lippe are documented extensively in: Weiß, Bodenordnungsrecht.
- 130 Information kindly provided by Herrn Wilhelm Brinkmeyer.
- 131 Cf. Auswanderer, A 185, 293, 416, 555, 730 = p. 31, 39, 48, 59, 73; Reineke, Stammbäume Niebuhr und Brinkmeyer.
- 132 Information kindly provided by Herrn Bruno Heuer.
- 133 On the state of Lippe's economy in the 19th century, cf. Steinbach, Eintritt.
- 134 L 92 Z IV No. 31, p. 142-45 (1776).
- 135 Cf. the table in: Hüls, Heiden, 169.
- 136 Cf. Kittel, Heimatchronik, 277; LZ June 21, 1996; L 92 T I Tit. 26 No. 5: After a land condemnation proceeding occasioned by the railroad construction, Röhr No. 3 had to cede more plots of land (1901).
- 137 Cf. LZ June 21, 1996; Böger, Geschichte der lippischen Wirtschaft, 545-50.
- 138 Cf. 100 Jahre Zucker from Lage.
- 139 Cf. König, Festschrift.
- 140 Hofkartenbetriebe/mapping of farms, 128.
- 141 Cf., e.g., various documents about selling of land and trading of plots of land in 1940 and 1943 (private documents, Niebuhr) and Colorplates 1 and 2; According to the information kindly provided by Herrn Karl-Ernst Bökhaus, his farm's already relatively cohesive agricultural property was squared up in 1937/38.
- 142 StA Lage, Gemeindeprotokolle, April 21, 1953; Starke, Tasche, 19. Merging in Hörstmar was introduced on March 9, 1953 and came to an end on December 19, 1963: Cf. Rhiemeier, Hörstmar, 262f.
- 143 Peter, Lippe, 478f.
- 144 Correspondence in the Schützengilde's/marksmen's guild archive in Lage.
- 145 Peter, Lippe, 478 f. The following censuses are from various sources, among them, *ibid.*, 478, 489.
- 146 Information kindly provided by Frau Henny Rieke, Hardissen.
- 147 For discussion of the dam structures, cf. L 109 Detmold Compartment 17 No. 8; private documents of Bökhaus.
- 148 L 109 Detmold, Compartment 17 No. 8 (File No. 7).
- 149 *Ibid.*
- 150 Cf. Hüls, Heiden, 85; L 92 Z II No. 2, p. 7, 11; *ibid.* No. 4, pl. 85, 87. In the Schadenverzeichnis [damage lists/records] pertaining to the Everstein Feud from c. 1409, Bökhaus and the Hardissen farms are entered under Lage parish and also under Barkhausen Amt and Heerse Amt (see above).
- 151 Darpe, 291 = LR NF 1498.06.07.
- 152 Cf. Hüls, Heiden, 103ff.; Meier, Dorfkirche Heiden, 11-18.
- 153 Butterweck, Landeskirche, 507f.; Starke, Lieme, 151 f.; Starke, Flurnamen, 120.
- 154 Cf. Meier, Dorfkirche Heiden, 80; as per Hüls, Heiden, 275, two houses in Hardissen (No. 35 and No. 41) in 1970 already belonged to Lage denominations.
- 155 Ortschaftsverzeichnis, 48f. In 1961, the proportion of Catholics had steadily risen, by 12 percent. (Peter, Landeskunde, 478).
- 156 Cf. Rügge, Kirchenordnungen.
- 157 L 89 A I No. 105 Leaf 51v; *ibid.*, No 111 Leaf 101v/02; *ibid.* Leaf 254v.
- 158 L 85 No 1905 (Obermeyer), No. 2759 (Brinkmeyer).
- 159 Cf. Starke, Niedermeyer, 9.
- 160 D 72 Krawinkel No. 2, Bökhaus II.
- 161 Quoted from Meier, Dorfkirche Heiden, 35.
- 162 *Ibid.*, 83.
- 163 Hüls, Heiden, 114.
- 164 L 69 No. 203 Leaf 2.f.
- 165 Cf. L 20 No. 37 Leaf 224f; L 69 No. 202 Leaf 22ff; Butterweck, Landeskirche, 379, 412; Meier, Dorfkirche Heiden, 50

- (on rebuilding the parsonage, 1753); Kittel, Heimatchronik, 152 f. (on the financial state of the land).
- 166 L 69 No. 190 Leaves 1-8; cf. Peter, Der Platz in der Kirche.
- 167 Cf. Hüls, Heiden, 176; Meier, Dorfkirche Heiden, 60f. (eliminating the Grabmäler and Friedhofsstreit/monuments and cemetery dispute), 63 (one of the 'most loyal friends' of Stefann); Pfarrerberichte, 170f.
- 168 Cf. StA Lage, Gemeindeprotokolle; *ibid.*: Gespräch mit August Blank/conversation with Auust Blank; private documents, Bökhaus.
- 169 Information kindly provided by Herrn Helmut Biere.
- 170 Cf. Meier, Dorfkirche Heiden, 37f.; L 69 NO. 222; L 16 No. 129 Leaf, 83ff.; L 69 No. 227.
- 171 L 83 A, 10 K 96 Vol. 1, Leaf 75 (see Fig. 5).
- 172 L 61 B Sect. VIIIa. For unknown reasons, Feger, Brinckmeyer, and Lukebart also put down 3 crosses ("X"s), but they had earlier provided a handwritten first version with their hand signatures (maybe the farm owners themselves were not at home when the officials called on them). The most extensive damage claims were those registered for Bökhaus (606 Talers), Niebuhr (418) and Röhr (383).
- 173 Cf. Butterweck, Landeskirche, 248-50; Meier, Dorfkirche Heiden, 37-43.
- 174 Pfarrerberichte, 309 (1870).
- 175 Cf. L 80 III NO. 1644 (not paginated; decisions about cost reimbursements not available); Purchase of the land: L 108 Amt Lage Compartment 2 No. 22, Vol. IV, No. 11; L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 5.
- 176 Cf. L 80 III No. 492, 826,3670,4133 (all without pagination). About Grünau: Butterweck, Landeskirche, 290. About the ancestry of the teacher: Burre, Lehrer-Seminar, 116,118,139,142.
- 177 Information kindly provided by Herrn Friedrich Vogt, Pivitsheide VH.
- 178 Cf. D 100 Detmold No. 1695; StA Lage, Gemeindeprotokolle, May 11, 1950, April 13, 1951, February 2, 1952, July 24, 1953, October 6, 1953, December 3, 1955; About the library: D 100 Detmold No. 758.
- 179 Cf. D 100 Detmold No. 541, 1695; StA Lage, Gemeindeprotokolle, July 22, 1958, July 3, 1962, April 14, 1964, November 13, 1964, February 15, 1966, May 22, 1968.
- 180 Cf. StA Lage, Gemeindeprotokolle, July 22, 1958, April 14, 1964, November 13, 1964, February 15, 1966, May 22, 1968.
- 181 L 20 No. 37 Leaf 188.
- 182 The old farmer Huxholl near Cappel, born Röhr, (no date, c. 1660) the shepherds at Röhr's farm: among others, Wechter Cordt, *Johan Röher, so dhomals mit Ihr Hochgr. Gnd. Graff Otten in Beheimen gezogen, Noch Johan Röher, so vor diesem Meyer uff selbigem Hofe gewesen*: L 20 No. 37 Leaf 369. About Graf/Count Otto, who later was in residence at Brake, and his deeds in Bohemia, cf. Süvern, Brake, 75f.; Süvern (Ed.), *Letzter Wille und Lebenslauf*, 138f.
- 183 Cf. Schadenverzeichnis, footnote, p. 101; Archive of the Lage Schützengilde: Letter of Karl Sundergeld to Rudolf Köllner, October 10, 1959.
- 184 LR 1746a; L 1 E VII 7 No. 1
- 185 Archive of the Lage Schützengilde (referring, in part, to older military files/decrees in StA Detmold)
- 186 Cf. Stöwer, Selbstverwaltung, 11; Rhiemeier, Trophagen, 106; L 77 A No. 8443 Leaf 1; L 89 A I No. 122 Leaf 7; *ibid.*, Leaf 34; *ibid.*, Leaf 288.
- 187 L 77 A No. 7083.
- 188 All quoted from the private documents of Reese; on genealogy cf. Bechtel, Niedermeyer.
- 189 Mainly, as found in L 109 Detmold, Compartment 3, No. 9
- 190 *Ibid.*, on the office tenures of the mayors, cf. also the Lippe Kalender/almanac, 1926 ff.
- 191 Cf. Stöwer, Selbstverwaltung; Steinbach, Kommunalverwaltung.
- 192 Cf. LZ, June 12, 1923 and June 16, 1923, private documents, Bökhaus.
- 193 Cf. about the following: Wehrmann, Lippe im Dritten Reich; election results per the figure, *ibid.*, 86: Landtag January 6, 1929 SPD 82 Stimmen/votes, VDP 17, DNVP 59, Landvolk 29, KPD 8, Staatspartei 13, NSDAP –, Zentrum –, Ev. Volksdst. 11. Landtag, January 15, 1933 SPD 56, DVP 4, DNVP

- 31, Landvolk 1, KPD 23, Staatspartei 1, NSDAP 58, Kath. Volksvertretg. –, Ev. Volksdst. 12.
- 194 Among candidates for the Lippe Landtag in 1919 were: Hermann Siek, brickmaker, Hardissen, and Heinrich Röhr, farmer, Hardissen (both of the Lippe electoral groups); 1921: Hermann Siek, brickmaker, Hardissen (DVP) 1925: the same (DVP and Zentrum); 1929: the same one (DVP): Hüls, Wähler, 127,131,135,140.
- 195 Quoted from Starke, Obermeier, 9.
- 196 Cf. for information in this paragraph: Bartelt, among others, Landleben, 92-99; Starke, Obermeier, 9; L 113 No. 385, p. 15ff. (Held); *ibid.*, p. 92 (Party members, 1935)
- 197 Cf. for general information: Bartelt, among other, Landleben 92-99; private documents, Brinkmeyer (prisoner camp).
- 198 Köhnen, Wenn alles in Scherben fällt, 259f.
- 199 Cf. Stöwer, Selbstverwaltung, 15. The following is mainly from the Hardissen Gemeinde minutes from 1946-1969 that are available at the Lage municipal archives. Also helpful was a transcript, kept there, of a discussion with the earlier municipal employee, Blank.
- 200 Information kindly provided by Frau Emilie Bam, Hardissen.
- 201 Cf. StA Lage, Gemeindeprotokolle from October 28, 1950, October 30, 1951, November 25, 1952, November 16, 1954, November 13, 1956, November 4, 1958, April 1, 1961, March 22, 1963, December 20, 1963, October 8, 1964; Freie Presse, January 25, 1952; StA Lage, Discussions with Blank and Merrem; LZ, July 29 - August 1, 1966.
- 202 Dr. Rügge expresses gratitude to Herrn Helmut Biere of the Arbeitskreis Stadtgeschichte des Lipp. Heimatbundes, OV Lage, for his assistance in designing the chapter on the history of clubs and associations; and also very much thanks the participants in the seminar on associations and clubs in Hardissen, organized and lead by Herrn Biere, which took place within the context of a series of the VHS Lippe-West on April 1, 1997; in addition, cf., LZ, April 16, 1997.
- 203 On the history of clubs and associations cf. private documents, Kamphausen; StA Lage, discussions with Merrem (who provided the quotation about Drake and the lightning) and Heuer (quote about the Sportplatz); *ibid.*, Gemeindepro-
 tokolle, August 26, 1950, August 6, 1951, February 2, 1952, September 2, 1965; Freie Presse, May 29, 1956; information kindly provided by Herrn Helmut Biere.
- 204 Cf. LZ, March 1, 1997; information kindly provided by Herrn Helmut Biere.
- 205 Cf. Festschrift “20 Jahre Fortuna Lage v. 1969 e.V.”, LZ, June 5, 1990, and information kindly provided by the former business director of the club, Herr Andreas Fritz, Lage.
- 206 Cf. StA Lage, Gemeindeprotokoll of August 1, 1950; Westfalen-Zeitung (Neue Lippische Rundschau), August 27, 1951; LZ, August 24, 1953.
- 207 Cf. Chronik des MSC Lage.
- 208 Information kindly provided by Herrn Karl-Ernst Bökhäus.
- 209 Cf. StA Lage, Gemeindeprotokoll, March 12, 1952.
- 210 Information kindly provided by Herrn Karl-Ernst Bökhäus.
- 211 Cf. Clauß, 225 Jahre Lippische Landes-Brandversicherungsanstalt, 12f.
- 212 L 89 A I No. 120, Leaf 344v. Later, the firemen were mentioned in the Gogericht records only seldom (Spring/Easter, 1794, Tasche and Held were suggested as firemen: *ibid.*, No. 122, Leaf 288).
- 213 Quoted from Clauß, 225 Jahre Lippische Landes-Brandversicherungsanstalt, 13.
- 214 Cf. *ibid.*, 14f.
- 215 Cf. L 77A No. 7874 Leaf 444f.
- 216 Cf., *ibid.*, No 7968-7971, especially, 7968 Leaf 10f., 63, 70-82, 178f; 7970 Leaf 165f.
- 217 Cf. Clauß, 225 Jahre Lippische Landes-Brandversicherungsanstalt, 23.
- 219 Kirchhof private documents.
- 220 Information kindly provided by Herrn Karl-Ernst Bökhäus and Herr Wilhelm Brinkmeyer.
- 221 Several timbered (Fachwerk) structures no longer in existence were mentioned by Meier-Böke, Hardissen.
- 222 Private documents, Kreuzbusch.

223 Cf. *ibid.*; 1873-1973. 100 Jahre Schutz für Dich (Festschrift); StA Lage, Gespräche mit Merrem und Fischer; Gemeindeprotokolle, April 18, 1958, June 11, 1963; Information kindly provided by Herrn Karl-Ernst Bökhaus; LZ, March 3, 1978.

224 Cf. Lipp. Rundschau, June 18, 1979, July 20, 1988; LZ, September 24, 1996, January 22, 1997; Information kindly provided by Herrn Helmut Biere and Herrn Wilhelm Brinkmeyer; StA Lage, Gespräche mit Blank und Helle.

225 Main sources in the *Staatsarchiv* Detmold: *Schatzregister* (1467 = L 92 Z II No. 2, p. 7, 11; 1488/89 = *ibid.*, No. 4, p. 85, 87; 1497-*ibid.*, p. 44, 46; 1510-*ibid.*, No. 6, p. 26, 29; and according to the work done by Stöwer/Verdenhalven; Kirchenbücher/church records = L 112 A Heiden, among others; Eheprotokolle/marriage terms = L 108 A No. 131ff; Gogerichtsregister = L 89 A I No. 105ff., 357; Grundbesitzveränderungen/property changes = L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 5; Ortsakten = L 20 No. 37,53; Heberegister = L 92 Z IV No. 12; Kolonatssachen 19. Jh = Jahrhundert = century = L 108 Am Lage Comparment 2 No. 22, 4 vols.; Hofkartenbetriebe, 128; Adreßbücher 1901-97. Dr. Rügge extends his gratitude to Herrn Bruno Heuer of Lage, and earlier from Hardissen, for much information about past property owners, and up to the present day.

226 According to Wechsel of his son Kersten, c. 1545/58, in L 83 D vol 1.

227 Cf. LR 1983, footnote.

228 Cf. L 83 D, vol. 7, leaf 95; L 83 A 9 D 82.

229 Preuß, Familiennamen, 81.

230 L 85 No. 3730. She was born in 1789 and died in 1866 as a pensioned woman (Leibzüchterin) on Röhr's farm.

231 Darpe, 234.

232 The Abbess of Herford enfeoffed in this year as successor of Ilse Tense the Lemgo proconsul (Bürgermeister) Joh. Kotteman (Cothmann): Darpe, 256.

233 Hans Helt is a *Zeuge* (witness), 1581 (L 83 A, 2 B 85); in 1596 yet, Hans Held of Hardissen is *Zeuge*, 70 J. (per Krawinkel). His possible son, Henrich Heldt is *Zeuge*, 1590 (L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 4).

234 LR 1746a; LR NF 1410.12.01.

235 Per D 77, Brenker, older owners: before 1523, Berndt Feger, married Ilse NN (per Wechsel); c. 1525, Ernst Feger.

236 Ernst is father or step father (so noted as such in one place) of Cordt; Zeuge 1568, died 1581; cf. L 20 No. 37.

237 Only evidence, per a statement of the elder Cordt Feger, 1606, Hermann married 'first of all' the daughter of Meyer Cordt of Orbke (L 20 No. 37, Leaf 171).

238 Contrary to false information in Brenker, among others, she was a daughter of Hermann Meyer of Barkhausen, born Betge, from Biesen and Maria NN (cf. Eheprotokoll).

239 Feger of Hardissen is *Zeuge* in 1759, 40 years old (L 85 No. 1599) and was buried as Johann Henrich Feger at the age of 88 on December 29, 1806: Thus, he was born around 1718/19 and cannot be one in the same with Meyer of Ohrsen already married in 1728. Most likely, he had married between 1746 and 1751 the woman whose birth name was Helweg.

240 LR 1746a; cf. LR NF 1410.12.02 [the] *Niggenbuir*, 1410.

241 Per D 77 Brenker, Anneke N. 1600 is exchanged / as parents Cordt and Ilschen are named. Reineke, Stammbaum Niebuhr, and Krawinkel (D 72 No. 2, Niedermeyer) name a letter of exchange (Wechsel) from 1500 (!): Anneke Niggebur, born of Cordt N. and Ilschen, and in addition, a Wechsel from 1568, according to which Anna N is going on Krietenstein's farm and is exchanged for Bartold Krietenstein's daughter (married on Niebuhr's farm?). A Berndt N., possibly from Hardissen, married, 1595, the widow Feger; he is Cordt Feger's father's sister's son [i.e., Cordt Feger's cousin].

242 Marriage pursuant to a suit to fulfill a marriage promise (L 85 No. 210).

243 Cf. L 85 No. 1599; Reineke, Stammbaum, Niebuhr.

244 Hermann pays, in 1467, only a Gulden, whereas Niedermeyer pays 6 and Tasche 5 (?). Per Starke, Obermeier, 4 f., the farm does not show up in the *Schatzregister*s until 1535.

245 About the first marriage, cf. L 85 No. 1328; first name, per Butterweck, Meierhof Hölsen, 14f; first name of the 2nd wife, per information kindly provided by Herrn Wolfgang Bechtel, Detmold.

246 FL 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 4, vol. II (see this source, too, for additional older genealogical information).

247 L 85 No. 1905; L 20 No. 63.

248 L 20 No. 53, Leaf 137-54; L 85 No. 1924: Marriage legal case of Widow Tasche against Johann Wilhelm Obermeyer, now Tasche of Lükkhausen, 1706-11. For the origins of the debt; and having an increased tax-in-kind burden cf. Starke, Tasche, 14.

249 L 20 No. 53 Leaf 167 f; per Starke, Tasche, 14f. the predecessor, Johann Wilhelm Tasche, born Obermeier had his farm stewardship (serving as *Meier*) taken away from him, 1719.

250 Quoted according to Starke, Tasche, 16. After the death of the Meierleute, 1742, Casimir Kuhfuß leased the farm for six years, as interim innkeeper from Lieme; cf. L 92 T 1 Tit. 26 No. 4, vol. I: Tasche's *Ländereien*/land and possessions were sold at auction, 1741 *ad elocandum* [= to rent out the farm to someone other than the tenant-owner].

251 A Franz Henrich Tasche was born in 1761 and died in the same year. Apparently, the oldest son, who had been baptized as Johann Henrich, was then called "Franz Henrich", and he was confirmed in 1776 under that name; another son named Johann Henrich (*1763) was confirmed as Joh. Hermann (!). Another possibility is that in 1761, the wrong baptismal name and the wrong age were recorded, and thus it was not Franz Henrich who died at that time, but the older son, Johann Henrich.

252 References to dates: 1551,1594,1706,1760,1877 come from: Reineck, Stammbaum Brinkmeyer.

253 After the death of his brother-in-law or his stepfather in Heiden, starting in 1751, Brinkmeyer farm operated its own oil-mill there; it was powered by a single horse: L 92 N No. 938.

254 LR NF 1486.01.05 = LR 2700: per Platenau, Plattdeutsches Wörterbuch, 150, "Liukebort" means Geizhals. [trans. "miser or scrooge", or even "curmudgeon"].

255 Cf. D 72 Krawinkel No. 2, Bökhaus; 1582, Cordt Lukebart is witness.

256 L 12 No. 1 Leaf 313: Release of Henrich' son on April 16, 1575.

257 Marriage not extensively referenced; Wrampe takes up residence on land from No. 11, or lives as an Einlieger there (see above); he is witness when the marriage of Cordt Tappe is recorded, in 1663; in the Heiden church records he is, per the baptism records of December 7, 1669, written down as *Tappen Hermann*.

258 Cf. L 92 Z IV No. 11

259 The first husband died in 1690, supposedly at the age of 28 (?). Next, a marriage to Johann Tönnies Sander near the Neuenturm (new tower), recorded on January 31, 1691, quite possibly did not take place; per the *Gogericht*, the *Stätte* had been taken over in 1716 for the third time, and around 1720 inherited for the fourth time.

260 L 20 No. 37 Leaf 72f. The final evidence for identifying Brinck Cord of 1595 as one in the same as Cord Wechter of 1599 ff. is still not in. The original farmstead locations bordered one another.

261 Supposedly one in the same with *Backs Johan*, Einlieger, 1647, who is mentioned in 1662 in the Heberegister (?). Cf. also the *Gogericht* Michaelis 1657, Pivitsheide (!): Backs Johan is noted as a *Stätte* (L 89 A I NO. 110 Leaf 369).

262 *Gogericht*: the daughter of Johann Scheiffer of Hagen!

263 Cf. L 20 No. 37 Leaves 136-40.

264 On the mill and its lessors, cf. L 92 C Tit. 6 No. 5, 4 vols. The miller, Joh. Chr. Möller had been listed under Hardissen in the 1776 census (no house number indicated); the mill appears for the first time in the *Salbuch* of 1855. On the mill and the Billingshausen estate, cf. Starke, Lieme, 139-45.

265 Private documents, Prante.

The Authors

Nicolas Rügge was born in 1968 in Detmold and studied History and German Literature and Language in Hamburg and Bielefeld. For his exam and dissertation topic on the Herford City Council, he was awarded prizes by the Historical Society of the Ravensberg Grafschaft and by the University Society of Bielefeld. In addition, he has authored a local history (Lüerdissen, 1994) and several essays on topics dealing with regional history. He is currently working as an archivist at the State archives in Osnabruck (Lower Saxony).

Wilhelm Brinkmeyer was born in 1944 in Lemgo and is a farmer in Hardissen.

Walter Pfaff was born in 1914 in Rheydt, deceased 2004. After his studies in Frankfurt an der Oder, he was employed as a teacher in Ohrsen, Hardissen, and Hagen and his last position was as Rector of the Grundschule in Lage. He was very much involved in the Natural History and History Society in Lage and the Zieglermuseum (museum of the brickmakers) in Lage. He has also authored publications on settlement and regional histories.

Carol A. Devore has a PhD in German Languages and Literature (University of Iowa) and undergraduate degrees in Psychology and European History (Oregon State University). She currently operates a freelance translating and editing service in Salem, Oregon, and is a technical editor for the University of Iowa's Center for Computer-Aided Design.